



*The*

# **EXPENDABLE PAWN**

**by Don Wiest**

*Learn what Noah's world was really like!*







*The*  
**EXPENDABLE  
PAWN**

**by**  
**Don Wiest**

**MOUSE TRAP**  
PUBLICATIONS, LLC

Phoenix, Arizona



# The Expendable Pawn

by Don Wiest

Mousetrap Publications, LLC in Peoria Arizona  
Website at: [expendablepawn.com](http://expendablepawn.com)

Copyright © 2010, 2014 by Don Wiest  
All rights reserved  
First Addition Release: 2010  
Expanded Second Addition Release: 2014

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage or retrieval system, without written permission from the author or publisher.

Publication and Distribution by  
AZ Publishing Services, LLC, 6020 N 77 Place, Scottsdale, AZ 85250  
[www.azpublishingservices.com](http://www.azpublishingservices.com)

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture quotations are taken from the Holy Bible, © 1996, 2004, 2007. Used by permission from Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Carol Stream, Illinois 60188. All rights reserved.

International Standard Book Number (ISBN): 978-1-936037-42-1  
*Printed in the United States of America*  
1. Non-fiction 2. Religion 3. Historical

*A Portion of the proceeds generated from this book are donated to:*  
Tim Olp Bible Ministries, To The Point Radio Show at: [timolp.com](http://timolp.com)  
Genesis Survey Project at: [genesissurvey.com](http://genesissurvey.com)  
Renewed Life Church, Glendale AZ at: [RNewLife.org](http://RNewLife.org)

*Cover design and artwork by Don Wiest.*  
*Page layout by Ron Robinson and Don Wiest.*



❖  
**DEDICATION**  
❖

To Ralph and Mary Curtis, my adopted parents,  
and to the extended family of faculty and students at  
Mt. Ellis Academy in Bozeman, Montana, who held my  
hand during the formative years of my spiritual development.

To Ron Robinson, for his boundless encouragement  
and assistance in the development of this book. When we  
work together, there is a spectacular synergy that is addicting.

To Dr. Timothy Olp, for sharing his impeccable sense of  
the Biblical narrative; he is truly one who walks with God.

I am enthusiastically compelled to evangelize a newly discovered  
appreciation for King Jesus who persisted, in spite of  
my stubbornness and self-reliant nature, to faithfully remain  
by my side and shape me through the efforts of this book.  
I now consider His companionship my most priceless possession.

I also wish to dedicate this effort to each and every reader who  
grows tired of witnessing the pervasive nature of sin and who  
will be inspired by King Jesus to spread the message of Grace  
so we can all go home to the paradise we so foolishly threw away!





❖  
**PRELUDE**  
❖

*“The thing that has been is that which shall be;  
and that which has been done is that which shall be done;  
and there is nothing new under the sun.*

*Whosoever speaks and says, ‘Look, this is new,’  
should know that it has already been  
in the ages which were before us.”*

*\*\*\* Ecclesiastes 1:9-10 \*\*\*  
(paraphrased)*



  

## FORWARD

  


Regardless of whether one reads from scriptural or secular accounts, the story of Noah and the Flood always seems to fall short of delivering, shall we say, *the rest of the story*. Perhaps even more intriguing and mystical than the Flood itself is the strange and alien world which appears to have existed up to this catastrophic event. The Bible gives us a tantalizing flyover which revealed key events 1,500 years *after* the actual time period, as they were related by God to Moses, the author of the Hebrew Torah. Archaeological discoveries have provided us with extraordinary isolated tidbits of information; however, when considered without supporting context, such finds usually create more questions rather than provide us with a better understanding of the mysteries surrounding the pre-Flood civilization.

The story *behind* the story of the Flood ultimately reveals itself as a series of epiphanies to this author and, as such, is presented to the reader in the expectation it may bolster one's faith in a God who truly spares no expense when it comes to the perpetuation of this unique creation we know as species *Homo sapiens*. Discovering how and why the Flood story became such an integral part of our history is the intended spirit of this presentation, so it will be necessary to explore some backwater areas (excuse the Flood pun) leading up to the primary reasons why God found it so essential to erase much of the past and start with a clean slate after the flood waters subsided.

There have been numerous accounts dealing with the possible causes of the Flood itself, and there have been just as many multimedia treatments focusing on the origins of pre-Flood civilizations, ranging from off-world colonization to disconnected vignettes featuring stoic Sunday school characters spouting cliché-like Shakespearian prose. To date, this author has been unable to locate any comprehensive works which objectively attempt to fit all the pieces of the puzzle together in such a way as to harmonize science, archaeological discovery, and self-evident truth with the Word of God.

The reader will discover that in the course of exploring new concepts which might lend themselves to fresh groundbreaking theories this effort will sometimes cross over into the self-proclaimed intellectual territories delineated by both Creationists and Darwinian Evolutionists. Searching for thought provoking alternative solutions appears to be a unique approach for an endeavor such as this, and it has been extremely helpful in the development of fresh ideas. On the other hand, this adopted strategy will no doubt raise disapproving objections from both sides of the aisle, thus presupposing the extent of the controversies which continue to persist between these two diametrically opposed camps. It should also be noted that a troubling controversy exists between Creationists, with respect to different interpretations of time. Is it billions and billions of years or just a few thousand years which delineate Earth's creative history? It may come as a surprise that both sides of this particular debate have more in common than they perhaps think with regard to this complex topic. Rest assured we will deal with this subject in more depth later.

This author admittedly harbors straightforward interpretations of archaeological discoveries, scientific analysis, and theological interpretation; therefore, some of the conclusions presented in this book will boldly advance the idea that Earth was a desperate battlefield in Noah's time and, as a direct result, mankind was literally eight humans away from total extinction. It will also become apparent to the reader that the time period between the creation of Adam and the completion of the Ark appears to have been underscored by an insidious gene war. The commander of this ancient genetic war is clearly identified as a ruthless alien who was at the vanguard of an extraterrestrial incursion for the singular purpose of completely destroying the human race through a systematic campaign of inter-breeding. There was a diabolical and protracted strategy behind this elimination process, as the reader will soon discover.

No doubt these are bold and thought provoking theories to be proposing, and it may very well ignite the flames of controversy and skepticism for some readers. Nevertheless, this author feels strongly that it is absolutely necessary for such ideas to find their way into the arenas of serious discussion; primarily because such close examination usually results in a much better understanding, especially for present day Christian believers, as to how evil methodologies might have been deployed against our an-

## FOREWORD

cient ancestors in order to effectively subjugate them. Secondly and more importantly; it is imperative Christians diligently explore such controversial subjects because the Bible plainly states that in the last days this great architect of evil will once again be allowed to use his considerable powers to “*deceive the very elect*” before he meets his fiery demise during the final conflict which promises to finally put an end to this great controversy.

It seems ironic that both Christian and evolutionary belief systems are based, to a large extent, on “unsubstantiated” theories which fly in the face of actual physical evidence that could otherwise provide absolute proof as to the beginnings of life. In the final analysis, the belief and acceptance of either discipline is reduced to a matter of individual choice based on an unshakable position of personal faith.

Darwinian Evolutionists embrace theoretical evidence which convinces them there is no God and that human development is a product of species transmutational processes which advance inexorably through undefined lengths of time. In the process of evangelizing this belief system, they choose to disregard the mathematical practicalities of quantum physics and instead replace it with a theoretical faith based on Darwinian observations. This belief system is continually challenged by the fact no one has been able to produce a transmutation that effectively links one kind of species with another. They also offer no substantive proof as to where the original spark of energy came from which supposedly animated the very first single-celled organism.

To a certain extent, Christians also base their belief system on theories because they accept on faith there is an omnipotent Designer who physically exists and is responsible for the creation of mankind as well as the universe. In fairness, this can only be categorized as a theory because, like Darwinian Evolutionists, Creationists are unable to produce actual physical evidence. The basis of their theories and belief systems are rooted in an ancient book that Christians claim to be the product of divine inspiration, handed down by the Creator for the purpose of redeeming mankind back to his original intended mandate. An important part of this individual redemptive process demands that Christians participate in a lifelong spiritual journey intended to sublimate inborn sinful natures through enlightenment and fealty towards God.

Christians are denied the ability to present God in the flesh via any known physical dimension which might provide unassailable scientific proof He *really* exists; consequently, they must struggle for converts just as Darwinian Evolutionists do. It is similar to the paradox of wind; everybody knows it is there because it transports sounds and odors, creates waves, and even destroys life, but no one can actually *see* the wind.

Perhaps the Darwinian Evolutionists and other non-believers who are led to this book will be willing to consider a fresh and perhaps bold line of reasoning. It is a fact that by simply accepting on faith and truly believing God is *real*, Believers are able to “one-up” non-believers because the Bible promises the tantalizing gift of everlasting life in the physical presence of a benevolent and loving Creator. On the other hand, it is well known that non-believers place paramount importance on their present existence only because they have embraced the idea that nothing else is expected after he or she dies. No soul, no heaven, no hell, just the finality of death. If this is the case, then one of the intended purposes of this book is to coax non-believers to take a closer look at this unique Biblical promise. Think about it for a moment; if the inevitable finality of death is all a non-believer has to look forward to, then why not “play the odds” and try accepting and believing there *is* a God on the outside chance that just maybe the Bible could be right? Perhaps another way of stating this is that there is not much to lose but absolutely *everything* to gain!

One important piece of physical evidence which defiantly straddles both belief systems is the Bible, a curious, yet intriguing, collection of ancient stories and historical prophecies which orbits around the unveiling of a redemptive process intended to save mankind. Mathematically speaking, this book should not even exist today nor should it continue to be embraced by so many diverse peoples despite cultural, distance, or language barriers. No other book has survived so many turbulent periods of history yet managed to remain intact and without any significant changes to letters, words, sentences, or syntax. No other book has so accurately recorded important historical events which manifested exactly as predicted hundreds and even thousands of years after they were originally prophesied. No other book has so clearly and methodically presented the controversial story of a unique being that voluntarily shed His divinity to boldly confront an evil prince of darkness and, as a result of His victory, ultimately become mankind’s Savior.

## FOREWORD

No other book has recorded the wondrous, yet mystical, promise of an everlasting gift of life to all who simply accept on faith that Jesus Christ, the Son of God, was a real historical person who was brutally executed, rose from His grave, and now invites us to fellowship with Him in a re-created eternal paradise which He assures us will soon arrive on Earth.

In conclusion, readers should be warned ahead of time that information contained in this work often represents thinking outside the traditional box. Certain posits cannot be verified through methodical scientific analysis because...well...it appears the slate was really wiped clean with respect to the recorded history of the pre-Flood world. In the end, all we have are bits and pieces which, in truth, can be assembled in an infinite number of ways to catch a glimpse of the bigger picture. The objective here is to reveal one such picture which stimulates creative thought and simultaneously makes an attempt to answer more questions than it creates.

Last but not least, it is important to clarify the fact that this author is merely a scribe. If there are any accolades to be handed out for creative thinking, they belong to the One who has been waking me up at odd hours of the night with the inspiration to fit disconnected bits and pieces together in such a manner as to challenge traditional thinking on the subjects presented in this book. It also goes without saying that discovering possible answers to the questions posed in this book really does not matter with respect to determining an individual's salvation. What it does do, however, is offer a soothing balm when relentless questioning is rewarded with a new level of understanding. This author revels in the fact that man was made in the image of his Creator; therefore, he suspects a questioning nature is very much a part of the divine purpose which makes humans so unique in the universe.



## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN



## INTRODUCTION



How catastrophic was the Flood? Was it a worldwide event, or was it localized in the Black Sea area as recent discoveries suggest? Was the upheaval the result of rain alone, or were there other natural calamities which could also explain why we find seashells on mountaintops and city ruins below the ocean far away from any landmass?

Were we visited by extraterrestrials and, if so, when, who were they, and where did they come from? How did such visitations affect pre-Flood humans, and how does it still affect our lives today? Were these aliens seemingly dispassionate, super powerful beings with hidden agendas, as is sometimes portrayed in popular works such as Eric Von Daniken's *Chariots of the Gods* or Zachariah Sitchen's *The Earth Chronicles*? If we *were* in fact visited by extraterrestrials, were they responsible for establishing many of the foundational cornerstones key to our technological development?

Are extraterrestrials responsible for inculcating our ancient ancestors, thus making them more technically advanced than their modern-day counterparts? Most importantly, were these alien visitors responsible for the countless enigmatic mysteries which continue to defy logical explanation today? Is it possible these somewhat benevolent, yet mysterious, creatures left behind a trail of unexplainable artifacts and building sites which were intentionally designed to leave us completely baffled as to a rational explanation for their creation or purpose?

How does one reconcile the obvious indications of a lengthy evolutionary timeline for planetary development with the extremely short seven-day Biblical account of Creation? This ongoing controversy backs us into the even more difficult subject of dinosaurs; did God create these hideous looking and sometimes vicious monsters, and were they present in Noah's time? If they were not wreaking havoc among pre-Flood civilizations, then how does one reconcile their existence millions of years before the

Biblical Creation event ever took place? If God did not create dinosaurs, then how did they get here, and what purpose were they to serve by mysteriously appearing then disappearing? The Genesis story indicates that in the beginning there was the possibility that all creatures were herbivorous; meaning they only ate plant life. If this was the case then how does one explain carnivorous monsters such as the Tyrannosaurus-Rex, Utahraptor, Jeholopterus, Kronosaurus, or Allosaurus? These few examples are thought by many paleontologists and zoologists to have been the top five deadliest dinosaurs ever to roam the earth, and from the looks of them there is certainly no doubt they were designed exclusively to be highly effective killing machines.

The Bible also indicates that there may have been a pre-Edenic race of humans created by God before the Garden of Eden. To further fuel this controversial theory are countless paleontological as well as archaeological discoveries which seem to validate this fascinating presumption. If this is the case, then how long ago were they created and why? Also, if pre-Edenic humans were populating the Earth, then what was the purpose for isolating additional human specimens within the confines of a specially created Garden of Eden? Consider the fact that God could have converted the entire planet into one gigantic garden paradise if He had wanted to. Once banished from the Garden, did the offspring of Adam and Eve intermingle with the pre-Edenic humans? Did post-Edenic humans multiply and live simply as hunters and gatherers in small villages and nomadic tribes, or did they produce a technically sophisticated world which rivals or surpasses what we take for granted in our modern age?

After the expulsion from the Garden and the subsequent outward expansion of civilization, what was the evil distraction that so successfully turned humans away from their Creator, choosing instead a world of unimaginable cruelty and darkness? How does one explain the powerful and all-controlling evil motivation which caused almost every human to err so disastrously in the choice they had to make, and exactly to whom were they surrendering their allegiances? More importantly, why was this evil presence allowed to perpetuate itself again and intermingle with humans after the Flood? God destroyed this overpowering evil temptation by wiping out all wickedness with a global destruction, so why would He allow such a negative influence to return once again and attempt to contaminate His glorious creation?

## INTRODUCTION

Who was Noah and what was his world like? What was the state of ship-building technology during Noah's time and, specifically, what other types of technologies went into the infrastructure of the Ark? For instance, most Biblical scholars accept the fact that eight people were completely sealed in a watertight vessel for approximately 240 days; they generally agree this vessel was made of pitched wood and held the fodder necessary to feed and maintain the existence of who knows how many animals. Has anyone ever thought about what their source of light and heat might have been throughout the ship? Many of us naturally assume cooking stoves and oil lamps were used, but how dangerous would the threat of fire be if Noah and his family utilized such hazardous devices within the confines of a wooden ship? Let us not forget that this boat was probably tossing about in a massive storm the likes of which can only be imagined, which pretty much cancels out the use of windows during the initial stages of the storm. So just what *was* their source of light and heat? It is also interesting to ponder how Noah and his crew dealt with a year's worth of human and animal excrement, not to mention the unavoidable buildup of explosive methane gases. Did they just store it, or was Noah privy to some kind of sophisticated purging system integrated into the Ark's design?

This book also explores the ways God could have actually created the Flood through the use of natural laws and forces which would better serve to harmonize more directly with what has been forwarded through fairly recent cosmological and Earth science discoveries. While nothing can be known for sure, it was a fascinating challenge to explore this evidence and combine it with Biblical references to arrive at possible "what if" speculations which might better harmonize with science yet feature the added advantages of a Christian-based perspective.

In this same vein, it was also fascinating to explore another topic usually not addressed in the typical Sunday school class. What did Noah actually see when the hatches of the Ark were opened? What did this world really look like, and what might have been the first impressions as the eight of them gazed out over the new landscape? How did they survive while at the same time manage to establish a firm foundation for human re-colonization? Even with all the technological accoutrements we have at our disposal today to help us survive in harsh climate conditions, we would

be hard pressed to actually sustain such an effort for extended periods of time without succumbing to a debilitating and hopeless despair. It is difficult to imagine this ongoing titanic struggle in conjunction with drastically changed meteorological conditions, family rearing, constructing permanent settlements, raising crops, hunting, fishing, and re-discovering landmasses that have been completely altered beyond all recognition.

Discerning answers to the above questions and speculating on the many possible “what if’s” created the incentive of this work. The overall purpose was to explore life in the pre-Flood world, drill down to the core issues surrounding the tenuous relationship between man and his Creator, and explore the conditions which existed before and after the Flood. The foundation of this effort is based on Biblical scriptures, but it also integrates certain archaeological evidence and scientific discoveries which deserve serious attention yet are often not objectively considered.

It is important to note that this author believes the Bible to be an inspired work and that it was provided by the Creator for documenting the salvation of mankind. As such, it is decidedly not a comprehensive history book but rather an instruction manual which focuses on the plan for redeeming the human machine after it failed a simple test of trust. That being said, it should also be noted that the Bible has never failed to pass the litmus test of historical accuracy, especially when reinforced with other quantitative data. It is also amazing that the more we discover and learn about our world and the universe it inhabits, the more science seems to validate what has already been recorded thousands of years ago by inspired men of God.

For many Believers, a simple logic prevails and we are compelled to marvel at the unique complexity which is man while humbly paying homage to our Creator. The challenge is that when reading the Biblical account of the pre-Flood world, many of us come away with the nagging and uncomfortable impression that God not only seemed determined to destroy this marvelous creation but was actually throwing up His hands in abject despair for even conceiving the project in the first place! Why?



## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

❖  
**IN THE BEGINNING**  
❖

**I**n the first chapter of Genesis, we learn about the creation of Planet Earth, culminated by the sudden appearance of species *Homo sapiens* made in the image of an omnipresent Creator. By the end of the third chapter, we are surprised to discover mankind has suddenly succumbed to an evil influence after being banished from a special garden paradise into a world they seem ill-prepared to deal with. In the space of a few additional chapters, we learn that evil gets physical, expanding populations through a powerful controlling force which ultimately lures the majority of all humans into a world of unspeakable darkness and dispassionate cruelty. With sudden finality, this all comes to an abrupt end when the entire civilization meets their destruction by a disastrous flood.

Biblical scholars commonly refer to this time period in Earth's history as *Antediluvian* (before the Flood), so perhaps a good place to start would be to understand how many people may have populated the Earth starting from the Creation event and ending in Noah's time. Of course, there is no universally accepted record which establishes a reliable date for the Flood, but if we accept the chronology established by Bishop James Ussher (1581-1656)<sup>1</sup> that the Creation event began at nightfall preceding Sunday, October 23, 4,004 BC, as it was literally extrapolated from Biblical chronology, then the Flood date would be placed at approximately 2,700 BC. This date appears to be fairly accurate since numerous archaeological discoveries substantiate the Egyptians had successfully established an advanced civilization around 2,100-1,900 BC, which would have given Noah and his progeny the needed time to repopulate after the hatches of the Ark opened to a new world. It should be noted that the Flood date has been generalized for simplicity; for more specific information on the subject of Earth's historical timelines from the Creationist's point of view, this author suggests "The New Panorama Bible Study Course" by Alfred Thomson Eade.<sup>2</sup>



Before beginning population growth calculations, we must first contemplate a controversial question. Were Adam and Eve the only people on Earth after the expulsion from the Garden? Strong evidence exists both in the Bible and from archaeological discoveries that Adam and Eve may not have been the very first and only human creations as is often assumed. Archaeologically speaking, there are many examples of human skeleton discoveries which can be reliably dated much further back in Earth's history than a mere 6,000 years. While it is debatable that some of these discoveries might be millions of years old, as is the case of the controversial 3.3-million-year-old African ape-female skeleton dubbed "Lucy" (*Australopithecus*),<sup>3</sup> it is difficult to mount a convincing argument against the multiple Neanderthal specimens unearthed in Europe and parts of western and central Asia. So far over 400 specimens have been discovered and extensive radiometric testing places these Pleistocene period examples to be between 30,000 to 33,000 years old, which is well within the radiometric half-life dissemination rates of the Carbon-14 test reliability band. The youngest of these specimens (Hyaena Den) were discovered in the United Kingdom and have all been dated 30,000 years old. The oldest specimens (Vindija) were unearthed in Croatia and are between 32,000 to 33,000 years old.<sup>4</sup>

In fairness, it should be mentioned that the presence of an atomic blast in areas where ancient skeletal remains have been unearthed would have a profound effect on the accuracy and reliability of radiometric testing. This is because the extreme temperature and ionizing radioactivity generated from a nuclear detonation obliterates the neutronial properties of atomic particles, thereby skewing test results. Though the possibility of nuclear blasts in our distant past seems difficult to accept, there is some controversial evidence which supports the premise that they may, in fact, have occurred; therefore the resultant time-dating variables would have to be factored in.

Placing archaeological discoveries aside, it may come as a bit of a surprise to some that the Bible also supports the concept of an ancient race of humans more than one might think. For instance, anyone reading in Genesis will note a definite word tense distinction between, "Let us make *people* in our image," found in Genesis 1:26, as opposed to, "and *the man* became a living person," which we read in Genesis 2:7. Furthermore, as

we read on in the second chapter of Genesis, we learn God spared no expense building a special garden where He placed “*the man*”; note it does not say “*the people*.”

The translated Hebrew word for man is *adam* and, though this may seem confusing, *adam* can refer to both man (as in *people*) or to an individual (as in *the man*). *Adam* in the first chapter of Genesis is consistently translated to read “the people,” thus referring to its plural tense. What is unusually fascinating is the use of the word *adam* in the second chapter because it appears to be universally translated to read “the man,” thus referring to the singular tense. Why does this translated word tense variance exist between the first and second chapters of Genesis in most Bibles? Why does every single reference to the creation of humans mentioned in the first chapter always appear as the plural and not the singular person? And is it not equally curious that all references to the creation of man in the second chapter, without exception, deal with the singular person and not the plural? Did the first original translator make a mistake which was subsequently propagated throughout history by other translators?

In fairness, it can also be argued with equal plausibility that the opening Bible verses of Genesis chapter two are merely a summarization of the first chapter and, thereafter, followed by a further detailed breakout of the creation of man. If this is the case, then we are left with the difficult task of addressing the story of Cain and Abel. For when we read Genesis chapter four, we find that after murdering his brother, Cain fled to the wilderness of Nod with an easily identifiable mark and the promise that anyone else he associated with would suffer sevenfold any harm which should befall him. At a time when there were only three humans accounted for, it begs the questions: who would threaten Cain, and where did the subsequent city builders of Nod or, for that matter Cain’s wife, come from after Cain was cursed by God then banished from the presence of his mother and father? There are some theologians who explain this away by claiming the Bible does not record many of Adam and Eve’s births for the sake of simplicity. If this is the case, then we shall soon discover that the real reason behind those scriptural omissions has nothing to do with writing expediency and everything to do with an insidious alteration which took away their humanity and made them outcasts from species *Homo sapiens*.

Biblically and archaeologically speaking, there is overwhelming evidence placing human development before the creation of man in the Garden of Eden. We have already mentioned the questions raised by the plural versus singular creation references and the Cain paradox, but there are other curiosities as well. For instance, why does the first book in the Bible refer to certain Antediluvian offspring as “*heroes mentioned in legends of old*” (Genesis 6:1)? Did we not just read that Adam was the first man created? So who were these heroes, where did they come from, what did they accomplish to deserve such legendary status, and just how far back in time must we go to discover their root beginnings?

There is an admittedly controversial theory which takes its cue from the very first words written in the Bible, “*In the beginning...*” In Hebrew, the word *bereshith* is a prepositional phrase for these first three words and the word literally translates, “In the beginning which was not *the* beginning.” The word *was* is a translation of the imperfect active indicative of the verb for existence. This imperfect tense implies continuous action in the unspecified past. Many Christian scholars understand this to simply mean God existed before the Creation event, but it could just as easily be understood to mean life existed in the past and, therefore, has an undiscovered history of its own. This author recommends *Creation Chaos and Restoration* by Robert B. Thieme, Jr.<sup>5</sup> for a more thorough and detailed breakdown of this concept.

This challenging perspective opens up a whole new universe of possibilities because we are now contemplating, to the exclusion of the obvious omnipresence of God, what Earth’s history might have been *before* a very specific creation process took place – that being the one detailed in Genesis. We know there was a rebellion in the universe but we do not know when it began or for how long it had persisted before the creation process on Earth began. The word *before* is used as a reasonable assumption based on the fact that Genesis mentions a forbidden tree containing the knowledge of good and evil which was present in the Garden from the start. This can only mean the rebellion was already in progress; otherwise, we would be forced to ascertain just where this evil knowledge would have originated.

What follows can only be categorized as speculative theory since there is no irrefutable evidence to back it up, but what if there was a “pre-

history” of Earth which predated the Creation event? Is it possible Lucifer’s satanic rebellion, as it was detailed in the Bible, had been going on for millions of years *before* the Genesis Creation took place? What if this “architect of evil” had decided to focus his efforts against God to such an extent that Earth became the center of a cyclical struggle where God would initially create order and life only to have it repeatedly “trashed” by Lucifer in his efforts to discredit God? Could there have been a number of specific efforts to create fish, birds, plants, animals and even humans in the distant past which ultimately met with disaster at the hands of Lucifer? Is it possible there were multiple times in Earth’s past where God simply planned to “turn off the lights” because of irreparable damage resulting from the presence of this ideological challenger?

If the above has any ring of truth to it, then is it also possible God created some very large animals in the distant past which were suddenly turned into vicious monsters through satanic manipulation? What if God simply planned to destroy these “prehistoric” creations in a fiery cataclysm for the sole purpose of providing a critical resource for future generations of species *Homo sapiens*? And what if the same thing was to have happened with an earlier human-type species which initially gained legendary status in the heavenly universe only to be met with destruction because of irreversible satanic intervention? Could it be possible *these* human-types were the “heroes mentioned in legends of old” which we read about in Genesis?

It is important to repeat that the insinuations springing out of the above questions are based on generous doses of speculation because we simply were not there. All we can do is examine the evidence and contemplate the possibilities. For Believers, this actually becomes a liberating concept since the above Multi-creation Theory is arguably considered no more preposterous or impossible to accept than Darwinian Evolution. At least the Multi-creation Theory gives credence to the concept of divine engineering as opposed to the idea that mere random chance might have achieved the same incredibly complex results.

To further compound the ongoing debate, between Believers and Darwinian Evolutionists, are some additional as well as unexplainable curiosities found in the field of archaeology. As an example, why does the

32,000-year-old Lascaux calendar<sup>6</sup> or the 25,000-year-old Mayan calendar<sup>7</sup> go back so far in time, tracking celestial events for thousands of years before the first human was supposed to have been created? Or how does one explain the discovery of archaeological sites such as the 12,000-year-old Göbekli Tepe,<sup>8</sup> recently discovered in a southern Turkish province of the Mesopotamia region. Lest we forget, there is also the walled city of Jericho,<sup>9</sup> rebuilt several times in the same spot with the earliest site dating back 11,000 years (9,000 BC), which is approximately 3,000 years *before* the Creation event!

It is also noteworthy to point out that archeological excavation at another ancient site called Eridu<sup>10</sup> (5,400 BC) produced clay tablet shards bearing the very disconcerting *Epic of Gilgamesh*, leading many secular scientists and archaeologists to claim that the Biblical story of the Flood appears to have been plagiarized from this much earlier and more detailed record of a catastrophic flood event. There have been additional accounts of this story discovered in other selected archaeological digs within the Sumer region. The most complete surviving version comes from the Nineveh Library of Ashurbanipal, King of Assyria 668-627 BC.<sup>11</sup> As Believers, it would be presumptuous for us to consider the Flood story or its historical timeline to be inaccurately recorded by Moses; therefore, it is only logical to conclude there must be a much larger undiscovered and, perhaps unexplained story to be revealed.

Modern-day Christian scholars extrapolate the geological timeline of Earth's existence from the scriptures and, as Believers, most of us clearly understand that it is simply ludicrous to challenge the resulting authenticity because of the historical emphasis and importance placed on accurately documenting, as well as preserving, ancestral genealogies. The importance of ancestral heritage permeated the very social fabric of ancient societies and influenced an individual's right to inherit land and wealth, to hold public office, and even the mandated authority to rule over kingdoms. This was especially true with respect to the history of the Jewish nation. The universally accepted method used by the ancients when recording genealogies was to integrate them with important historical events which were then studiously duplicated, preserved, and subsequently passed down to succeeding generations for purposes of authenticating lineage. Because of this fact, it would have been impossible for such records to have been

## IN THE BEGINNING

systematically altered or destroyed by a single individual attempting to distort dates and timelines associated with important historical events. The variables associated with the spans of time alone would negate the effects of any meaningful data tampering, but when one factors in the cross-referencing of lineage and event information which was documented within multiple ancestral records, the probability of misquoted dates or timelines becomes a mathematical impossibility.

If we accept the fact that there may have indeed been a pre-Edenic race of people, then we have to ask another question. Why did God suddenly decide to create a special garden and place a separate, yet similar, creation within? Could it be possible God's intent was to place Adam, *the man*, in a carefully prepared earthly paradise to act as an ambassador for the rest of mankind – that being the pre-Edenic humans located outside of the Garden? Just perhaps, on closer inspection, there is an even larger concept to examine here. Could it be God was launching a preemptive plan designed not only to test His newest creation but also to checkmate the widening rebellion in His universe? It seems God gave this situation careful consideration, for it is apparent by His next move that He definitely had a larger strategy in mind. We read in Genesis 2:16 that the garden paradise was given to Adam but we also understand it came with a catch. Adam was instructed to tend and care for the garden, yet he was specifically warned not to help himself to any of the fruit from a tree called the “Knowledge of Good and Evil.” Furthermore, Adam was instructed that if he did partake of this particular fruit “he would surely die.”

If we think about this for a moment, we have to admit the *Knowledge of Good and Evil* is indeed a very strange name to give to a fruit tree! When God encouraged Adam to name all the plants and animals located in the Garden, did God reserve the right to name this tree or was it just any old fruit tree which happened to be singled out for the purpose of teaching a special lesson? Furthermore, how would Adam be able to comprehend what the word “*die*” meant, unless he had witnessed the death of other animals as an essential cycle of nature? And, lastly, if this was indeed a unique one-of-a-kind fruit tree, then why did God purposely include this tree in the Garden if it was to be strictly off limits to its inhabitants? Is it not curious that these newly created beings must suddenly be placed under a microscope and tested on a subject that not only elicited a personal choice but also introduced a word that perhaps had little meaning to them?

Assuming the Multi-creation Theory was to be debunked is it then conceivable that neither Adam, nor any of the universal subjects for that matter, could have known firsthand what the word “*die*” meant? Might it not be possible there was no previous experience in the universe to associate with this negative word? Perhaps this conclusion is obvious since it could be one of the key purposes for staging such an event in the first place. In fact, the concept of opposing forces, as we generally interpret these physical laws today, could quite possibly have been entirely foreign to the heavenly host up until the start of the rebellion.

In Revelation 21:1, the Bible establishes the fact that after the end of the rebellion a new heaven and earth will be created, which raises a very important question; what is wrong with the existing universe as we know it today? Our fairly recent ability to escape the confines of Planet Earth via orbital space flights, deep space probes, and space-based telescopic platforms has given us a new and deeper comprehension of the individual components making up our universe. At the same time, we have also discovered how our lives truly hang in the balance because our space exploration has revealed extremely lethal demonstrations of raw power on a scale so massive it is difficult to describe in words we can readily comprehend. Such phenomena include explosions of energy which are immeasurably more powerful than the most destructive solar bursts our sun can produce, temperatures which differ by several hundreds of degrees between light and shadow, gravitational forces so immense they consume light itself, and so on.

Perhaps the new universe would not be such a threatening and hostile place for God’s creations once the laws of opposition are rearranged, so dangerous conditions such as gamma ray bursts, quasars, super novas, colliding galaxies, meteorites, and black holes are eliminated or at least safely constrained by physical and dimensional laws we do not as yet comprehend.

The Bible clearly states, in Genesis 1:26, Earth was originally intended for humans but suddenly another challenger materializes and makes his home right in the garden along with the newly appointed owners. The source of this challenge was emanating from none other than Lucifer who chose to question God’s wisdom as well as His authority. Through

choice, Lucifer became a troubled creature who was overtaken by emotions of discontent and subsequently motivated to challenge God's plan. Of course, he thought he should know everything God knew and, oh by the way, felt he was also superior to God's newest creation... man.

With the two principles locked in this ideological struggle, it suddenly becomes clear the Garden of Eden could well have represented a specially prepared and staged event intended to demonstrate an extremely important educational lesson about the concept of evil versus good for the entire universe. It is apparent the newly created test participants were unaware of the bigger picture, so it is interesting to note that, like Job, it seems Adam and Eve were allowed to be set up by Lucifer as a test of their ability to make the right choice.

There is a compassionate, yet questioning, side to many of us which prompts a silent objection to the fact that maybe these tests were administered unfairly, since it appears the subjects did not have the benefit of prior knowledge and were naive to the significance of the consequences should they fail the test. This author often wonders if Lucifer was just as naive before he succumbed to his negative emotions, not fully understanding what the "knowledge of evil" meant. If this is the case, then perhaps we are treated to a clearer understanding of why Lucifer spiraled into such a hateful and diabolically evil creature, since he may have falsely reasoned God's "test" to be unfair and that he should have had the benefit of the bigger picture. Of course, the challenge here is that Lucifer was the *creator* of evil because of his willful separation from God, so how could God instruct him on something yet to come into existence?

Today, we sometimes witness acts of petulant defiance when we correct a child with a spanking. Many of us have seen a more malevolent pattern of rebellion manifest itself in adults when they elect to become terrorists and drive commandeered airplanes into the side of a building for the sole purpose of killing thousands of innocent victims. Their rhetoric claims they do this because they feel life was so unfair to them. The fact that they cloak their underlying anger in a guise of religious zeal does not hide the true source of their defiant fanaticism. With the benefit of hindsight, we now recognize the fall of man resulted in forever sealing Lucifer's fate. Earlier in the picture, though, it was simply going to determine if Lucifer



was to have a temporary season of power on Earth; everything depended on the choice which was to be made by the man...Adam!

Alas, with a single bite of forbidden fruit, the universal attendance witnessed, perhaps for the first time, as shame suddenly transformed Adam's demeanor from a self-confident creation into a quivering and cowering figure. The universal onlookers must have cringed in disbelief when fear and despair appeared in Adam's eyes after trying to cover his nakedness and deceive his Creator about what had just happened. And, finally, when Cain murdered Able, Adam and Eve along with the heavenly audience must have drawn back in abject horror as they suddenly witnessed what the word *die* actually meant to soulish creations. One can just imagine the universal host as it watches in continued shock and dismay the unspeakable results of evil still unfolding before their eyes to this day. With the benefit of experience and hindsight, now dearly paid for by the blood of human history, is there anyone who would disagree with the fact that evil will never again have a snowball's chance in Hades to raise its ugly head once God finally decides to terminate this horrible object lesson?

At this point, it seems appropriate to ask a paradoxical question. Is it possible God created evil? After all, the Bible assures us that God knows everything from beginning to end, so if this is the case, why did He proceed with the creation of Lucifer, knowing full well this creature would eventually become evil and thereby introduce chaos to the universal order of things?

Again, let us assume the fact that for the first time all creations were able to witness firsthand the effects of this strange new equation which proposed a dichotomy of universal order by the introduction of opposing forces. Now there is evil where once only good prevailed. Pain and suffering suddenly make their presence felt to oppose peace and pleasure, and, most importantly, there is now the finality of death to interrupt otherwise everlasting life cycles. It is difficult to understand, and sometimes even more difficult to accept, but as God allowed this opposition concept to blossom and grow, it actually placed a clearer perspective on what defines absolute good. Perhaps a simply stated analogy would be that there is nothing more effective than a really evil movie villain to adequately drive home the concept of what should be morally obvious.

## IN THE BEGINNING

This, in turn, prompts us to better appreciate the positive attributes and integrity of the good guy!

The fact of the matter is God's impeccable logic provides the only possible outcome. If God had elected to preempt sin by refusing to create its author in the first place or by destroying its seed as soon as it manifested itself, then fear would have eventually replaced love once this decision became public knowledge within the universal community. The resultant outcome would be that one could then legitimately make the case that Lucifer did not receive a fair break because his right to exist was preempted and, therefore, he would have been deprived of his right to choose for himself.

Instead, God elected to do what He does best. First, He preceded with the creation of Lucifer and then He allowed Lucifer the freedom to make his own choice; oh yes, make no mistake about it, Lucifer did not *have* to surrender to the bewildering emotional discontent and jealous anger which suddenly entered his thoughts. Next, God gave the universal host a choice which, unfortunately, resulted in swelling Lucifer's ranks with more idiots; one third of the heavenly host, as a matter of fact (Revelation 12:3)! Last, but not least, He gave the newly created man a choice which is, of course, the indirect product of this discourse.

Before man fell, we knew only what was abundant and good. God tried to warn us to stay away from the temptation of desiring both good and evil knowledge, but hey, we knew better...right? Well, there you go! God simply *gave* us what we asked for and now *we* must take responsibility and learn the painful lessons stemming from that fateful decision. If we as professed Christians fully understand this responsibility, we should consider it positively blasphemous to even *think* of ever blaming God for all our suffering and misery. We can thank God He also had a plan to redeem us!

In the beginning, He loved us so much He actually tried to protect us from becoming Lucifer's test subjects. He achieved this by restricting Lucifer to a very small area of the Garden and then warning Adam and Eve to stay away. Later on, He sacrificed His only Son for the purpose of redeeming His marvelous creation because He loved us so much. In straightforward terms, God simply extended the courtesy of respecting

our right to make our own choices! As is consistent in any constructive parent-child relationship, it is obvious our pain and suffering hurts our Creator much more than it hurts us.

The unshakable truth is God did not create evil; He only mandated the right to choose. We did the rest by succumbing to the evil lies told to us. From the beginning, it seems God maintained the position that His creations did not necessarily need to *experience* the knowledge of good and evil to understand that ultimately it was a dead-end street. On the other hand, He did allow it to come into existence in order that all could *decide* for themselves whether or not His wisdom in this matter should ultimately prove correct. One can truthfully claim that in man's case curiosity most certainly killed the cat.

The irony here is that the Trinity and the host siding with them must now stand by helplessly and watch this horrible panacea play itself out here on Planet Earth. The fact that it would eventually claim the ultimate sacrifice of God's only Son to redeem man from total destruction is truly the most heart-rending ordeal one could imagine our heavenly Father to have endured. When sin is abolished and God reestablishes order to the universe, humans along with King Jesus, our personal Savior, will undoubtedly be the single baseline resource for all other creations to study, since we will be the only resident experts who can testify as to what it actually *feels* like to be separated from the direct fellowship of God, experience pain, endure suffering, and ultimately experience the finality of death.

Now that we have addressed one possible function of the Garden of Eden as it may have related to the bigger picture of the universal rebellion, we can return to the question of the Antediluvian censes. For purposes of mathematical simplicity, let us assume Adam and Eve *were* the only people on Earth and proceed with the question of where and how many humans might have populated the Earth around the time of the Flood. It may come as a surprise to many of us that the exponential growth rate starting from a single couple who had an average of 500-plus child-bearing years over a 1,500-year period would give us approximately 15 billion humans on Earth in Noah's time. If we factor in some standard actuaries, such as infant mortality, accidental deaths, wars, et cetera, we can arrive at a modified number of around 9 to 10 billion souls on Earth

## IN THE BEGINNING

around the time of the Flood (for you math scholars, the formula below was used to arrive at the above estimate).

$$P_n = \frac{[2 Cn-x+1] [CR-1]}{C-1}$$

P (n) is the population after n generations which start with the first couple. The number of generations is represented by n. Values for n can be obtained by dividing the total time period by the number of years per generation.

The number of generations that are alive when P(n) is evaluated is represented by x. For example, if x equals 2, the generations that are alive are generations' n and n-1.

The value of C represents half the number of children in the family. If each family has only two children C would be equal to 1, and the population growth rate would be zero.

Additional information regarding this formula can be found on the internet at [www.1dolphin.org/pickett.html](http://www.1dolphin.org/pickett.html). The formula was first published by Henry Morris; *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science*, Baker Book House.<sup>12</sup>

This is actually a startling revelation to those of us who traditionally picture Noah's world as largely desolate tracts of land lightly pollinated by small crude villages. Since there are only a little over 6 billion people on Earth today, it is difficult to visualize a world with 4 billion additional people, especially when we listen to the litany of environmentalist claims that we are outstripping and polluting resources capable of supporting our "overcrowded planet." If we choose to consider the fact there may have been additional humans created in parallel with Adam and Eve, then we are presented with a picture of an entire planet literally teeming with humanity. What did this world look like? Where did all those people live and what were their daily lives like?

It seems logical to expect that after being banished from their idyllic paradise, Adam and Eve would probably choose to remain in the immediate surrounding area and that, as they continued to multiply, their progeny would have fanned out from there. After all, Eden was their first home

## IN THE BEGINNING

and it would most certainly address why, as stated in Genesis 4:24, God found it necessary to install a powerful security apparatus at the entrance, thus barring access to anyone foolish enough to approach it. One could logically ask why God needed all this security.

If there is one thing our history has taught us, it is the fact that humans pretty much react in a consistent manner regardless of whether it is today or far back in ancient times. Ask yourself, who of us has not felt the tendency to journey back to our childhood neighborhoods in an effort to gain a better perspective and understanding of how we live as adults? Now ask yourself why we should assume people who lived between the time of Adam and Noah would choose to ignore this same strong human tendency and forget about their first home in a garden paradise... especially since so little time had passed since the expulsion? Consider the fact that Adam lived 930 years and that even though eight generations had passed into history before Noah was born in 1056, there were approximately 100 years which actually separated Adam's death and Noah's birth. This means Noah's father, Lamech, would have had the direct benefit of Adam's oratory on the subject of the geographical vicinity as well as the object lessons surrounding the banishment from the Garden of Eden. It also means that even though Noah did not personally sit in his great-great-great-great-great-great-great-grandpa's lap and listen to these stories in person, he was able to sit on his daddy's knee and learn the details from someone who did!

With respect to our natural-born homing instincts, one can reason that handed-down stories and basic curiosity would mandate a periodic pilgrimage to this ancestral neighborhood, if for nothing else but to steal a glimpse of Paradise lost and marvel at its beauty...from a distance, of course. Because the Garden does not exist today, it is easy for us to gloss over the fact that this small piece of real estate provided undeniable *visual* proof to Antediluvians that God was not some off-world ethereal ideology, but an all- powerful physical entity who was *real* and loved us so much He created each of us in His likeness and then further blessed us with a prime piece of universal real estate for our pleasure and to ensure our survival.

In spite of all that seemed harmonious and stabilized, as far as human existence was concerned, there suddenly appears a new and perhaps

incomprehensible problem to deal with. The Bible clearly states that while God was physically walking and fellowshiping amongst humans they suddenly began to reject Him as their Creator. What seems even more incredulous is that these humans appeared to be surrendering to some sort of prevailing evil influence and doing so on a massive scale. Unbelievably, they were abdicating in spite of both the physical existence of God as well as the garden paradise of Eden! What could possibly have been so alluring to humans that they would unanimously elect to switch allegiances and abandon their Creator in the face of such overwhelming physical realities?

Christian philanthropists have for century's subsidized archaeological digs in the hopes of discovering artifacts which could provide irrefutable proof of the existence of God and/or the Son of God. Just imagine for a moment how easy it would have been for Christians living in the 1800's to completely refute someone like Charles Darwin if they could suddenly point to the actual physical remains of the Garden of Eden. Can you imagine how embarrassing it would have been for Darwin if Noah's Ark had suddenly been discovered just after he decided to go public with his new book called *The of Origin of the Species*? And how fun would it be today for us Christians to quietly introduce an atheist to the very Creator Himself after this individual foolishly tried to convince us there was no God?

Indirectly, the Bible informs us that the Garden of Eden was physically parked squarely in the middle of the Antediluvian world (Genesis 4:24). In addition, there are numerous scriptural references throughout the Old Testament clearly stating that God Himself regularly appeared among ancient man. Yet, in spite of all this, we mysteriously find Antediluvian humans exhibiting a hard heart and resentful spirit, leaving us to wonder in barely controllable frustration at their abject stupidity and ignorance in the face of such overwhelming proof!

Perhaps before passing judgment too quickly, we would do well to closely examine just how powerful this insidious evil influence, along with his brilliantly conceived battle plan, might have been. At this point, the real question that needs to be asked is "What was the carrot that was so successfully dangled, by Lucifer, in front of mankind's nose?" What would

make humans suddenly rally to an evil presence while abandoning a preferential status with their Creator?

In the days of Frederick the Great, linear combat tactics were deployed by field commanders to maintain movement and volley fire control over large groups of men. Each unit or battalion had a flag and the primary purpose of this flag was to establish the physical location of where the soldiers were supposed to make their stand. More importantly, it gave all individuals within the unit a visual icon that physically represented something to help them overcome their mental fear of dying when placed in harm's way. That "something" was the self-sacrificing attribute of each individual to suppress his fear of dying and instead act in the best interest of his friends and comrades. This, in turn, elicited a collective psychological determination, made by each individual, that he would not become the first person to break away from the rest of the group and run for his life.

As long as all individuals in the unit maintained this discipline, the unit remained intact and functional on the battlefield. Conversely, once a single man allowed the protective safety of his friends or his commander to become sublimated, then he was said to have "lost his nerve," meaning his fear of dying physically overcame him. This immediately became a field commander's worst nightmare because the actions of one man could literally dissolve the morale of an entire army within minutes. The term *rally around the flag* gave field commanders the ability to effectively maintain control over thousands of individuals in order to achieve the objectives of the battle or campaign.

Lucifer needed the metaphorical equivalent of a "flag" which would successfully rally humans to him and away from their Creator. With this in mind, we are thus lead to the inescapable conclusion that the physical presence of Eden in the Antediluvian world represented an idyllic paradise where humans would not have to struggle for survival. But this alone does not address the central strategic reason why God needed to place death-wielding angels around the entrance to the Garden after man's expulsion. The self-evident realization for us is that visitors to this precious piece of real estate were motivated by far deeper and more passionate purposes than just reminiscing about what a great place it was to live.

It is important for us to remember that the Tree of Life was still physically located in the Garden, and that partaking of its fruit bestowed the

## IN THE BEGINNING

gift of immortality...as long as one had access to it. It is unfortunate, but there are many of us today who were taught, at a very early age, that Adam and Eve were created immortal. However, the Bible clearly states, in Genesis 3:22-23, that after talking it over, the Lord concluded it was necessary to expel Adam and Eve from the Garden so they could no longer acquire access to the Tree of Life. This can only mean Adam and Eve were originally created mortal and would thus die if deprived of the everlasting elixir. Therefore it should not come as a surprise to us that our first parents were keenly aware of this deprivation and would have communicated this loss to their progeny.

For such an important commodity as this to be so readily available meant that, without exception, every single Antediluvian would have known about the geographical vicinity of the Garden. It is also a certainty they were passionately motivated to somehow attack and neutralize the perimeter security surrounding the Garden for the purposes of re-entering and obtaining their fair share of the spoils. In fact, all they really needed was someone who was audacious and knowledgeable enough to lead them!

Just imagine it; Antediluvians had a real chance to reach the Tree of Life and secure its life-giving fruit which subsequently promised to cancel out the fear of facing death! Of course, there was the risk of being vaporized by some unknown death ray; however, getting one's hands on the fruit from this particular tree would have been a singular and all-consuming passion for post-Edenic humans. It is apparent that attempted break-ins would be quickly dealt with, which means humans would have been enthusiastically open and receptive to anyone promising unrestricted access to the property. Is there anyone who can honestly deny that someone as crafty as Lucifer would not think to seize this opportunity and take full advantage of it?

By combining man's fear of dying with the physical availability of death's antidote, Lucifer could depend on human fear and greed to completely distract them from paying any kind of consistent homage to their Creator. If one finds this fact difficult to accept, then please explain the purpose for all the security. Why did God take special pains to plant an armed guard at the gate while lecturing Adam and Eve about the destruction which awaited them if they attempted to approach its entrance? God could have just destroyed Eden or relocated it on another planet, could



He not? An all-powerful Creator capable of creating the universe would certainly have the ability to make the Garden disappear. The only logical conclusion we can come to is that God indeed had very important and practical reasons for leaving Eden, along with its special Tree, intact and right where it was.

Adam and Eve failed their personal test and were banished from the Garden, but the rest of mankind still had to be subjected to the same personal choice. It is quite possible Lucifer offered the tempting promise of eternal life to Antediluvians in exchange for their allegiance. God, on the other hand, was very explicit and clear about humans even approaching the Garden of Eden with the expectation of acquiring and eating anything coming from this very special location ...it was strictly off limits!

It would be easy for Lucifer to posture himself to humans as the one-and-only mastermind who could successfully override the access security to the Garden and thus allow him to exploit man's fear of death by offering the eternal fruit. Keep in mind, the individual making the choice was not likely to even acquire a taste of this fruit...Lucifer was certainly not motivated, nor perhaps had the capability, of making that happen. The simple act of succumbing to the expectation of *acquiring* the fruit effectively redirected their fealty towards Lucifer rather than to God. When Lucifer first disguised himself as a serpent entwined on the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, it was downright shocking how quickly he was able to turn Eve and then Adam with the same deception; "*Surely you will not die,*" the devil possessed serpent hissed!

History recounts many stories centering on the human quest for eternal life: the Epic of Gilgamesh, the Crusades, and the expeditions of Ponce de Leon, to name a few. When Christ was here on Earth His core message was to believe in Him in exchange for the *gift* of eternal life. It seems of all the dreams which man chooses to pursue most diligently; eternal life always seems to head the list. There are a few exceptions to this single-mindedness which are mentioned in the Bible. For instance, this author often ponders what God's response would have been if Solomon, for example, would have asked for eternal life instead of the gift of wisdom...well perhaps that is another story.

Many people are not aware Christopher Columbus actually made three expeditions to the New World. The last one was specifically launched

## IN THE BEGINNING

to find the source of the fountain of youth or *eternal waters* as it was commonly referred to throughout the kingdoms of Spain and Portugal. During this time, it was commonly believed by both aristocracy and peasants alike that these magical waters existed somewhere in the New World along the Central American peninsula, and that is precisely where Columbus concentrated his resources in a relentless search to discover its physical location. Predictably, he never found the fountain of youth, but this expedition did manage to consume several lives and what remained of Columbus' entire fortune, leaving him destitute and essentially forgotten for the remainder of his life.

Today most of us really do not give such a quest much bandwidth because we are positively certain a fountain of youth or a tree of life does not exist in our world. But for a moment let us consider some "what ifs" which might take place if a present day group of archaeologists suddenly announced the discovery of an ancient garden that, after closer inspection, appears to be the long lost Garden of Eden. Along with this momentous discovery, they have also verified the existence of a life-giving tree which could not be approached due to some, as yet to be identified, protective force field!

Can you imagine how the media and scientific communities would handle this information? How would world leaders and governments react? Would they try to suppress the discovery or engage their respective military resources for protective "national interests" sake? What would the Vatican's response be and how would other religious groups maneuver to get involved? Last but not least, how would we as individuals plot to get our fair share of this most powerful life-giving elixir? Who would not be willing to sacrifice almost everything in exchange for even the remote chance of securing the serum for eternal life?

The human race has lived with greed for over six thousand years, and most of us can easily imagine how insecure life would become on this planet if a discovery such as the Tree of Eternal Life were to suddenly materialize. Each of us can readily picture the tremendous amount of political and competitive focus which would result in today's world if such a Tree existed. It would be the primary objective of every nation to control it, countless wars would be fought to protect it, unlimited resources would be dedicated to understanding its formula secrets, and

defeating the protective security systems surrounding it would be the focus of enormous research and development.

With this in mind, it should not be too difficult for us to embrace the fact that the Tree of Life, which was *physically* located in Noah's world, would not also become just as alluring for humans in that particular period of time. Remember, Antediluvians had a tremendous advantage because they already knew the geographical vicinity as well as the capability to visually observe this most holy of grails.

Obviously, Antediluvians by themselves did not possess the technology to penetrate God's security, though this author suspects many tried and failed. We do know there was one creature that probably did possess some knowledge about this advanced technology, though he likely lied through his teeth about having the capability to defeat the militant gate guard if it became necessary.

When we turn to the Bible, we find numerous disconnected scriptural references which give unmistakable clues pointing towards a sinister shadow war directed at the elimination of species Homo sapiens. We know Lucifer had an axe to grind against mankind, and we know he had the power and audacity to direct such an elimination campaign towards God's creation while at the same time spreading subversive propaganda against the Creator Himself. But, more importantly, what was the root motivation for Lucifer to go to all that trouble? If it was just a matter of dispatching humans, there were obviously many less complicated methods at his disposal. What was the anticipated reward if he was victorious in exterminating the human race? It should be apparent to all of us by his actions, present as well as past, that Lucifer actually believes he can eventually replace God and establish himself as the new centralized power in the universe! But why would it be necessary to destroy mankind, especially Antediluvian mankind, in the process? What possible contribution could humans make in the titanic struggle between good and evil?

Before proceeding further, it is important to define the choice of certain words which will be used within the next section of this presentation. Of particular note are the words *alien*, *hybrid*, and *demi-god* since their association might seem out of context, especially when used in conjunction with

Biblical references. These are not words one would normally hear in a typical sermon or Sunday school class, so the author asks the reader to pause for a moment and study these definitions very carefully:

**Alien:**

Any creature that is not indigenous to Planet Earth.

**Hybrid:**

A cross-pollination of two species; be it plant, animal, or substance.

**Demi-god:**

A hybrid result by crossbreeding a god and a human together.

In Genesis 6:1-4, the Bible suddenly and abruptly addresses an invasion of aliens, meaning non-indigenous creatures, who were specifically called the sons of God. They were clearly not from this planet, and it does not appear they were part of the human race because in the same verse it states that *they* found *Earth* women beautiful and took them as wives. This clearly identifies them as not of this world and something other than human.

Now this is a truly astounding passage because in just a few carefully chosen words the Bible announces the abrupt appearance of off-world creatures which started intermingling with humans! It is frustrating that a more in-depth revelation on this subject was not recorded by Moses because, to say the least, this is fringe stuff which seemingly puts the Inspired Word out there with the bizarre world of science fiction! It seems the Bible suddenly catapults us into an *Invasion of the Body Snatchers*-style movie script. To many of us, this realization becomes so shocking and unbelievable that we simply block out the stark implications and continue to quickly read on as though these verses were some kind of scriptural misfire or perhaps allegorical in their intended nature.

There are several Christian scholars who believe the term “sons of God” simply refers to the human descendants of Seth who against God’s will start intermarrying with Cain’s progeny. While this interpretation is arguably a distinct possibility, it does not consider the fact that *all* men took on the cloak of sin after being expelled from the Garden, so both lineages would have been permeated with good as well as evil humans. Also, if this is the case, then one can reasonably posit the term “sons of God”

should be applicable to both genealogies, so what would be the point of isolating one lineage over another?

On the one hand, we can reason that the distinction of being identified as a son of God merely meant this individual was one who remained righteous in the presence of evil, but then why the unique identification? Did God not care equally for those who were not recognized as the sons of God? On the opposite end of the spectrum, one could also interpret the fact that these protagonists were being identified in the scriptures as "*sons of God who took Earth women*," thus clearly setting a lineage distinction between the two parties in question. This fact is further punctuated by the offspring resulting from their sexual liaisons, which are distinctly and separately identified as something that, at best, can only be considered partly human. According to our above definition, something that is cross-bred would more correctly be identified as a hybrid, and the Bible is consistent with this separating distinction because it specifically identifies this new creature by another name.

It seems Seth lineage theorists have an extremely difficult time with the concept of outer world alien visitors coming to Earth for the purpose of terrorizing its inhabitants. On the other hand, they do not appear to be particularly bothered by the fact that angels, who are also not indigenous creatures to Earth, come and go as they please performing various tasks for God. So the question has to be asked, why is it so difficult to grasp the concept of alien visitation by off-world creatures that include angels, or for that matter the Creator himself, who obviously is not indigenous to our planet? Please understand this author would not for a single moment contemplate going so far as to attach the label *alien* to our Creator; however, for the purposes of this discussion, it is important the reader fully understands the use of this word. Alien is simply defined as something not of this Earth which subsequently arrives from another part of the universe and makes its presence known to humans.

In this day and age, we are treated to countless creative definitions as well as visual representations of what we think aliens might look like. Many science fiction movie blockbusters have portrayed aliens to be grotesque, ruthless, and frightening creatures which haunt our imagination and chill our blood. Conversely, we have also been treated to whimsical and sometimes comical little runts who benevolently seem to have our best

## IN THE BEGINNING

interests at heart and are intelligent enough to appear obtuse about this fact. The challenge is for us to momentarily put all these creative ideas aside and not let them influence the actual definition of the word *alien*. In the context of this discussion, aliens are simply creatures who are not indigenous to Planet Earth. By indigenous we mean they were not born here.

In our quest to discover just who these alien sons of God might be, we can start by identifying who they *are not*. Matthew 22:30 and Mark 12:25 supposedly informs us that angels do not marry, also meaning they were not given the necessary plumbing required to procreate. However this assumption can be challenged by the fact that the two angels who were sent to warn Lot were targeted for rape by the residents of Sodom and Gomorrah, thus insinuating angels may have the capability of sex. What is important to consider here is if these sons of God were not part of the human race created here on Earth then who were they, and where did they come from? Is it possible these sons of God were a distinct and separate race of creatures originally created by God and positioned in the heavenly hierarchy somewhere between the holy Trinity and angels?

It is pretty much a given that since they were called sons of God they must clearly be one of His creations but, from outward appearances, they do not seem very godly by suddenly swooping down out of nowhere and chasing around after human females. The answer as to who these sons of God were is revealed in Jude 1:6, “And the angels who did not keep their proper domain, but left their own abode, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day.” The use of the words “domain” and “abode” in this verse are not referring to buildings but to physical modifications which occurred once these creatures elected not to keep their original created form. The Greek word used to describe “abode” is “*oiketerion*,” which is only used a few times in the Bible and more correctly refers to a bodily habitation. In other words, these *former* angels willingly chose to surrender their divinely created features for those which were more compatible with earthly humans. In this case we must conclude that being referred to as a son of God should not be considered a “warm fuzzy.”

There is little doubt, as we read further on in the book of Genesis, that these sons of God must be some of the rebels siding with Lucifer during the real-life star wars rebellion which was raging throughout the universe.

The Bible tells us that the mating of these aliens with Earth women produced hybrid (half-alien, half-human) offspring which are uniquely identified in the scriptures as *nephilim*. What is even more disconcerting is the Bible also states that some of these *nephilim* progenies went on to become “the heroes mentioned in legends of ‘old’” (more on that subject later).

The word *nephilim* is understood by many to mean *giants* because this is the definition which persists from the earliest Greek translations of original Hebrew texts. The more accurate Hebreonic translation, however, means *demi-god* (half-god) and is more literally understood by some Hebrew scholars to mean *monster* or similar negative connotation. This sinister definition is probably why the Greeks translated the word *nephilim* as they did; assuming the word *giant* better described a big scary-looking creature. The actual Hebreonic root etymology of this word is *naphal*<sup>3</sup> which literally means “to fall, fall upon (as in attack), or to be cast down.” While it is true that there are many Biblical references describing *nephilim* as big in stature, it must also be remembered that we have precious little information as to the average height of a typical Antediluvian, thus it is quite possible the hybrids may not have appeared giant sized at all, during this time. It is also important to point out that this fundamental root description gives the Seth lineage theorists additional challenges because it clearly identifies a unique creature which has very little to do with human lineage and seems to be purposely set apart from it.

Subsequent Biblical as well as exhaustive archaeological references about these demi-gods indicate that they quickly began to disrupt the *Homo sapiens* bloodline by producing more half-human, half-alien hybrids. The fact that *nephilim* were able to assimilate so quickly within the human race indicates that their sires must have closely resembled humans as far as bi-lateral symmetry, sensual capabilities, and general functional attributes are concerned. Since alien fathers obviously possessed superhuman strengths which were genetically transmitted to *nephilim* offspring, it ensured that the hybrids had the unique capability to effectively dominate humans, despite the fact that they were also half human.

Make no mistake about it; these sons of God were evil and there was a diabolical purpose behind their concentrated attacks on humans. The Bible is plainly documenting the beginnings of an all out genetic war launched and sired by Lucifer and his converts. The sinister ripple effects of this campaign become more alarming when we note how carefully and meticulously the Bible begins to trace the *Homo sapiens* lineage starting

with Adam as opposed to the nephilim which were the offspring resulting from the union of aliens and Earth women. Suddenly, those long boring who-begat-whom verses starting with the fifth chapter of Genesis seem to rivet your attention do they not?

Obviously God did not approve of these hybrids and He seemed to be very specific in documenting only the ancestral lineage of those humans who took pains to avoid overt solicitations from the sons of God. Does this not pique your interest just a little? Why would ancestral lineages be so important? Well, hold onto your hats, folks, because there is more to compound this truly alarming and shocking realization!

In Genesis 6:4, it specifically states that, “*In those days, and even afterward, nephilim lived on Earth,*” which means they were present before as well as after the Flood, so it is important to note that the alien sons of God were allowed to return to Earth, have sex with Earth women, and once again produce post-diluvial nephilim hybrids. The Bible identifies these hybrid lineages by various names throughout the Old Testament; some examples include: *Raphaim* or *Raphaites* in Genesis 14:5, Genesis 15:18-21, and Deuteronomy 2:20; *Anakites* or *Anakim* in Numbers 13:33 and Deuteronomy 2:20; *Emites* in Deuteronomy 2:10; and *Zamzummites* in Deuteronomy 2:20.

At first glance, this seems in direct conflict with God’s intent to rid the Earth of its evilness by drowning all creatures, both human and hybrid, and then start over. It is blatantly obvious that God was not pleased with Antediluvian man and it is just as obvious that wickedness accelerated after these insidious hybrid offspring began making their presence known. If this is the case, it would seem God’s best solution would be to first destroy all men as well as all *nephilim* hybrids then prohibit the surviving “sons of God” from having sex with human females. On closer inspection, however, it seems God still had a reason for re-introducing hybrids after the Flood.

It is conceivable that God’s purpose for nephilim perpetuation was to keep the choice to serve God or Lucifer in front of humans as well as the universal audience. For man, the challenge was to teach the profound lessons of responsibility and finality associated with choice, and this could only be introduced to mankind through generational experiences which would ultimately provide the foundation for a gradually and sometimes



painfully acquired wisdom. Militarily speaking, this could also be viewed as a diversionary tactic by God to preoccupy His adversary while carefully unfolding His ultimate strategy to redeem mankind. Of course, God had to make some changes to the rules of engagement after the Flood because it was obvious the allure of eternal fruit proved too powerful and all consuming for most Antediluvians, so it was necessary to level the playing field a little. The most effective way of doing this was to get rid of a very important focal point!

If we examine the Old Testament Scriptures closely, we will notice certain periods of time marked by specific milestone events. These time periods, or dispensations as they are referred to by Biblical scholars, can best be delineated by the progression of God's overall plan to save man. The time period beginning with the Creation event and ending with the death of Abel is best summed up as man's age of Innocence. The subsequent period beginning with the introduction of the genetic war and ending with the Flood has been identified by this author as the period of Judgment. It should be noted that the official designation for the second dispensation is more commonly referred to as the age of Conscience, but since this particular ordering of events culminated with such catastrophic finality, it is this author's belief that the dispensation of Judgment seems a more accurate description of the period in question. After the Flood, mankind entered the period of Government at first administered through prophets and later followed by a succession of kings. The fourth period was the dispensation of Promise because this best sums up the milestone event when God establishes His everlasting covenant with the Jewish nation through Abraham's progeny.

The fifth dispensation, which was introduced through the creation and dissemination of the Ten Commandments, is the legalistic time period of Law. It is interesting to note that the time periods of Government and Law were both distinguished in the Bible by the practice of ceremonial rituals symbolizing the birth, life, death, and resurrection of Jesus Christ, a man of Jewish descent who lived in the geographical area referred to today as the state of Israel. The central theme of Christ's message to mankind while He was here on Earth focused on the replacement of these legalistic and traditionally ordained ceremonies through the sacrifice of His life! After Christ died on the Cross and was resurrected from

the tomb, He appeared to His disciples and instructed them to evangelize the following message:

1. Christ was a real historical person who lived on Earth and died for us.
2. He was raised from the tomb to become the only living Savior of man.
3. The free gift of eternal life belongs to anyone who believes the above!

This amazingly simple and straightforward message can be further reduced and better defined in a single word...Grace. At the precise moment when the apostles were commissioned through the Holy Ghost to become evangelists, the sixth time period was ushered in and is commonly referred to as the ecclesiastical or Grace period. The Grace period was historically marked by the explosion of Christianity for the specific purpose of swelling the ranks with Believers who elected, on their own volition, to accept and believe in Jesus Christ as their personal Savior.

We continue to live in the Grace time period today, which means our individual commission remains to evangelize this important message. Our singular purpose is to invite non-believers into the fold before the seventh period, which is the establishment of the Messianic Kingdom. Unfortunately, a time of tribulation will enter our lives before this blessed event occurs. The word *tribulation* means *trouble* and it is referred to as such because it describes what we all have to look forward to in the very near future. It will be a time when the metaphorical gloves come off and Lucifer unleashes three devastating wars centered on the extermination of the Jewish nation. He also intends to conjure up additional distractions meant to deceive and confuse Christians, but he will fail with those who diligently study the scriptures and anticipate these diversionary tactics. For more detailed information on this important time period, this author recommends *As America Has Done to Israel* by John P. McTernan,<sup>14</sup> and *The Islamic Antichrist*, by Joel Richardson.<sup>15</sup> Brief synopses of the three wars were gleaned from these incredible books and are outlined below as follows:

It is anticipated that the first war will be ushered in as a preemptive nuclear strike launched by Israel against Iran and Syria. This attack will draw in additional countries, including Saudi Arabia, Lebanon, Iran, Egypt, and Jordan, and they will all fare badly. The principle outcome of this war will be the decimation of the Palestinians, a race of people who will be specially targeted because of their long history of fanatical atrocities committed

against God's chosen people. It is particularly interesting that the anticipated catalyst responsible for starting this war will be the absence of America's supportive role as a preeminent ally against those who continually plot to destroy the state of Israel. America's elimination as a super power will likely be precipitated by a crippling financial collapse followed by disinterested posturing, corrupt decision makers, and the inability of the military to adequately respond to any crisis. Judging by the actions emanating from the 2010 administration, this seems especially close and ominous!

The second war will be initiated by a massive coalition force, financed and led by Russia. Though prophecy instructs us that this war will be launched after the preemptive attack, it is controversial with regard to how much time actually separates these two conflicts. The central objective of this war will be the elimination of Israel in retaliatory response to the first war. This allied force will be funneled into a gigantic killing field and destroyed as they rush to capture the capital city of Jerusalem. The Israelites will also suffer heavy losses during this conflict; however, they not only survive the ordeal but many also come to recognize and validate Christ as their true Savior. This realization is a direct result of the Creator's spectacular intervention as He unleashes devastating earthquakes along with other natural calamities against the enemy. All eyes will witness this through extensive media coverage and, because it without question fulfills Biblical prophecy, the results are massive Jewish conversions as well as multitudes of other non-believers who begin to pay homage to Christ and are saved ...hallelujah!

The third war will once again be a coalition force, but this time it will be commanded by Asian leaders which are joined by any remaining Arab nationals. They will deploy as a massive army of millions and cross the Euphrates River as they strike out towards the Middle East. Once again their strategic objective will be the destruction of the state of Israel. This infamous battle is referred to in the book of Revelation as the battle of Armageddon. The name literally refers to a large valley situated at the base of Mount Megiddo where the campaign will culminate in a horrific slaughter. It is during this battle that prophecy is finely fulfilled by the triumphant return of King Jesus. He will intercede in the nick of time to save the capital city of Jerusalem from destruction. The good news is the outcome of this event will also serve to draw many more non-believers away from Lucifer's grasp.

## IN THE BEGINNING

The eighth and final dispensation will be the Destruction of Evil, but this will not occur until after the Millennial Reign of Christ when He establishes His kingdom here on Earth. Translated, this means we will experience a thousand years of fair government and peace, that most elusive and long dreamed of human quests. King Jesus, the “King of Kings,” will administer His centralized world government from the rejuvenated capital seat located on the former site of the old Jerusalem. As righteous believers, we will be blessed with reanimated bodies and enjoy a season of joy, peace, and harmony never before experienced in our former lives. More importantly, we will be able to converse with God and King Jesus up close and personally, on a one-on-one basis. Anything this Earth has to offer pales into insignificance when compared to that scintillating prospect!

Once Lucifer is released from his thousand years’ bondage he will, true to form, assemble yet one more army of non-believers which he will personally take command of for his last battle. This contest will be short-lived, however, as this advancing juggernaut will be checkmated by a “lake of fire” which will destroy Lucifer and his evil minions for good. This destruction culminates the eighth dispensation, and in our new lives we will bask in the spectacular wonders which will forever unfold as a direct result of God’s righteous reign. We will be God’s appointed diplomats assisting King Jesus with earthly duties as well as the as yet to be unveiled plans for universal expansion...what an exhilarating prospect to look forward to!

The above synopsis may seem to stray from the subject at hand; however, it is important to present the contributions of nephilim progeny within the overall scope of their impact on the plan of salvation. As we have seen it is undeniably coupled with Biblical predictions of evil’s eminent destruction so that we may better understand Lucifer’s tactics and prepare ourselves for what is coming. With all this in mind let us take a closer look at the Old Testament contributions made by the hybrids.

God’s redemptive battle plan after the Flood and during the two time periods of Government and Law is a good place to start. When reading post-diluvial scriptures from the time Abram left Ur through the reign of King Solomon, the reader can sense the presence of powerful hybrids, but we also notice a marked difference in their ability to influence humans. After the Flood, it seems the process of recruiting humans to the “dark side” was taking more time and could best be identified through

stories of specific individuals within selected locales. It goes without saying that some type of hybrid influence persisted after the Flood because the Bible makes countless references to man's seemingly inbred reliance towards the worship and allegiance given to various idols and gods in spite of the fact the Lord obviously did not condone such practices.

It is interesting to contemplate why humans seem to have this inbred proclivity to fashion, and consequently worship graven images and idols. Even today, we see worshippers pray to shrines featuring idols such as the Virgin Mary, or the prophet Buddha, and wonder why someone would spend so much time and money to create and enshrine edifices of dead people, manufactured with composite mixtures of stone, metal, and wood. Idols are obviously conceived as a product of human inspiration, so what would motivate other individuals to transfer their prayers, faith, or allegiance to a piece of artwork made by human craftsman? We even see people idolizing images of Christ on the cross, praying and worshiping this object as if it might transfer some magical power during moments of need. As our Saviour, Jesus Christ willingly gave His life to redeem us, but as our Creator, He specifically denounced the concept of idol worship within the Ten Commandments, so why do so many persist with such blasphemy?

There are some who might mistakenly point to statues and monuments such as the Lincoln Memorial and make the same comparison. The difference is that these monuments were built to commemorate an individual or event and not for the purpose of idolizing or praying to them for help and guidance in personal affairs. Is it possible that the tendency to fashion and worship idols originated from distant memories and habits hard wired into us through Antediluvian ancestry? Perhaps it was an evil-directed practice, forced upon Antediluvians, to create idols fashioned in the likeness of hybrid sorcerers who seemed all powerful with mysterious capabilities which were effectively used to subjugate early civilizations.

In the Bible, we can find a number of early Old Testament stories which mention the possession of household idols, or *teraphim* as they were commonly referred to. For some reason, these idols did not seem to be a serious infraction as far as the Lord was concerned. Many Bible concordances attempt to portray the common practice of maintaining these idols as harmless trinkets which were thought to protect homes and authenticate

family genealogies. The mystery here is if they were so harmless during the early days of Abram, then what conditions changed and why was the Lord so opposed to them soon after this time period? Why did God think so highly of Jacob when he ordered his personal household to destroy all idols before proceeding to Bethel to build a special alter in honor of the Lord (Genesis 35:1)? Why did the Lord continue to turn His back on Saul, especially after he visited the witch of Endor, who somehow managed to conjure up Samuel's ghost (1 Samuel 28:4-19)?

It seems there was a radical change in God's tolerance level to pagan practices which occurred sometime after Abraham's descendants settled in Egypt. For reasons that are not specifically delineated in the scriptures, God had a change of attitude and determined to get His chosen people out of their Egyptian environment once Moses took center stage. Perhaps this change of attitude paralleled the accelerating practice of sacrificing humans to man-made idols. As irrational as it seems, apparently civilizations such as the Philistines and Egyptians were no longer satisfied with simply building and worshipping idols; they now felt it necessary to offer the death of defenseless humans as a means of communicating with and calling on their inherent powers.

It also appears that the Lord was dealing with more than just Egyptian idolatry. There are Biblical passages, specifically involving certain individuals outside of Egyptian influence, who were capable of conjuring up and communicating with seemingly powerful gods. The story of King Balak's desperate attempt to halt the advancing Israelite army by hiring Balaam, a local sorcerer (Numbers 22: 4-5), for the purpose of placing a curse on Israel, is a specific example of the unnatural forces at work. In this particular instance, Balaam knew better than to interfere with the Lord's power, but the fact remains that he had a reputation and regularly consulted with kings, thus providing indirect evidence of his unusual powers. Incidentally, it was during this episode that the Lord displayed a comical sense of humor when He caused Balaam's donkey to start talking back to its owner. Balaam knew he was dealing with powers far beyond his insignificant capabilities and it unsettled him to no end!

During the exodus and especially after the establishment of Israel as a powerful nation, it seems that the proclivity to fashion and worship

manmade idols even began to dominate God's chosen people. This practice became so commonplace that it displeased God and engaged His wrath. After repeated warnings, God finally made good on His promise to turn His back on the Jews and thus allow them to be attacked and systematically decimated throughout the known world. One cannot read Old Testament scripture and miss the singular fact that God absolutely despised idol worship and took it very personally.

It is no mistake that the first two commandments God created for man specifically spelled out the absolute necessity to abolish the creation or worship of *any* idols and graven images! It would appear that since these influential distractions seemed to be in constant opposition to God's salvation plan, it is reasonable to assume their origin might be traced back to a prevailing source of evil power which once dominated early mankind. This might also explain why they were such an abomination to the Lord.

Something was afoot here with early man and it is likely the Flood destroyed much of the forensic evidence responsible for establishing this particular type of rebellion in men's hearts. It is a sure bet that the more God despised idol worship the more Lucifer would concentrate his powers against man to insure that it would become a strong tendency humans could not resist. It is quite possible the hybrids and their sires might have been at the root of this blasphemous practice.

As we have already discovered, the hybrids had a distinct advantage before the Flood which suddenly vanishes after the Flood. Obviously, before the Flood their ability to influence the human race seemed overwhelming because of promised access to the eternal life elixir, but after the Flood references associated with the intervention and subsequent worship of idols and gods seem to be more regionalized, apparently limiting the hybrids' ability to spread their influence beyond specific locales.

Once we stop and think about this for a moment, we suddenly realize the reason. There was no longer a centralized base of desire allowing hybrids to consolidate their power over humans because humans were no longer focused on a specific geographical point, such as the Garden of Eden and the Tree of Life. The loss of this all-important strategic focus was because both items had disappeared in the Flood.

## IN THE BEGINNING

In metaphorical terms, Lucifer suddenly lost his flag! The Lord had effectively eliminated the strategic objective of Lucifer's battle plan, thereby forcing him to rethink his strategy. More importantly, once God had effectively weaned humans away from the centralized controlling influence of these powerful hybrid dynasties, the way was clear for Him to exterminate them along with their heathen idol worship demands. With respect to the unknown contributions made by Antediluvian civilizations in their dealings with the sons of God and their progeny, perhaps we can now better understand just how critical a role the hybrids played during the post-diluvial phase of human development as it relates to the plan of salvation.

Obviously, the hybrids were still influential enough to attract followers because of their super powers, so it is no wonder the first and second commandments handed down at Sinai specifically prohibited the children of Israel from worshipping or idolizing any other gods. The apparent reason for putting these two laws at the top of the list and carving them in stone was because hybrids still had mesmerizing powers capable of drawing crowds of converts willing to fashion idols after them and worship them instead of the Creator.

Any serious discussion regarding idol worship and mysticism will inevitably turn to the subject of Egypt because of its countless archaeological contributions and enduring edifices serving to provide fairly detailed revelations about the daily lives of its subjects. The Egyptians solidified their civilization around 3,150 BC when the first Pharaoh, generally thought to be Menes, unified the two kingdoms of Upper and Lower Egypt. Its general history is recorded within a series of stable periods, identified as Kingdoms, which were occasionally interrupted by periods of instability, historically referred to as Intermediate Periods. The last period, established around 1,570 BC and identified as "The New Kingdom," was marked by a steady decline in power as Egypt became a recognized war trophy by a succession of foreign powers. The New Kingdom ended with Egypt's final assimilation as a Roman province after Octavian (Caesar Augustus) defeated Mark Anthony and Cleopatra at the battle of Actium in 31 BC.

In the Biblical Table of Nations, we note the Egyptian Empire descended from Ham's lineage (Genesis 10:6-20) and is one of the most frequently



mentioned civilizations in the Old Testament. It is well known that Egypt dedicated a generous portion of its economic resources and industry towards mystic rituals and lavishly carved stone edifices which idolized numerous deities. It is also interesting to note that though Egypt was obviously powerful and dominant as a civilization, most Biblical references cast Egypt in a disparaging way, and we soon gather that it was rampant with idolatry, corruption, and blasphemy in the sight of the Lord.

Egypt's first notable mention in the Bible is represented to us through the story of Abram. Though Egypt was never an empire, since it was unable to conquer or subjugate other major powers, it was clearly a powerful civilization which attracted Abram's attention because of its ability to withstand the threat of famine. It was also just as obviously a very dangerous place for a professed Believer such as Abram to patronize. Genesis 12:11-20 informs us that Abram feared for his life and thereby felt the necessity to deceive the Egyptian court to such an extent we almost have to sympathize with the Pharaoh when Abram tells a bold-faced lie about Sarai being his sister rather than his wife. This incident was the cause of a terrible plague which rained down upon the Pharaoh's household after he naively welcomed Abram into his palace and trusted the great patriarch's story at face value.

Archaeologists have discovered the existence of well over 2,000 gods used in Egyptian worship.<sup>16</sup> This is because priests in each province or Nome usually attached subtle differences to a nationally recognized deity, thereby personalizing it to fit the customs of their particular locale. These gods generally had two things in common: the male and female counterparts usually represented the power to control natural forces such as light, darkness, fire, earth, wind, water, etc., and they were commonly depicted as half human and half animal, depending on their particular powers.

It does not require much of a leap in logic to conclude that their dedicated ritual worship ceremonies could have easily resulted from the obvious powers displayed by these idolized deities along with their ability to benefit the Egyptian civilization if they were appropriately honored and exalted. In fact, Aker, one of their oldest and most powerful gods, was feared by most Egyptians because it had the sinister power of deciding whether the mummified body was to pass through the initial gate leading to eternal life or to eternal damnation and everlasting fire. While

these idols probably more closely represented the original hybrid sires, long since lost in pre-Flood antiquity, the rituals still remained and were strictly adhered to by hybrid descendants who retained some of their former greatness and were thus able to effectively amaze and control the Egyptian masses.

By the time Moses entered the picture the Hebrew descendants of Abraham and Joseph had lived in Egypt for many generations. It would be naïve to assume they would not have also been exposed to these powerful hybrid influences. Ramses II,<sup>17</sup> the individual most thought to have been the reigning Egyptian Pharaoh during the exodus period, apparently had a tremendous respect for his hybrid court advisors. It is reasonable to assume they were hybrids, and therefore formidable, because they were able to counter such wonders as the transformation of walking sticks into cobras! They also displayed the ability to duplicate some of the initial plagues in response to their first encounter with the Lord through Moses and Aaron.

This helps to explain why the Pharaoh stubbornly resisted the Hebrew God at first because Egypt had many gods which had already gained idolized status through the use of their hybrid powers. To Ramses the Lord was just a weak unknown Hebrew god, and he gave the impression that he was absolutely confident his host of Egyptian gods would ultimately prove stronger and more powerful. One only has to read Exodus Chapter 5 to sense the utter contempt Ramses had for Moses' God. It was not until after the plague of hail detailed in Exodus Chapter 9 that the Pharaoh finally started backing off of his stubborn streak.

It is reasonable to expect that after their exodus from Egypt, the Hebrews still retained strong tendencies to rely on idols made in the image of these hybrids, and that they would habitually turn to them in times of stress and worry. This most likely explains why the wandering masses led by Moses would repeatedly forget fantastic miracles performed by God during their exodus into the wilderness. It is difficult for us to understand, but it must be remembered that the Hebrew people had routinely witnessed unexplainable magical powers performed by hybrids while living in Egypt, so it was no big deal to them. Their inbred tradition for centuries was to summon these demi-gods in times of uncertainty, as exemplified at the

foot of Sinai by the recreation and subsequent worship of Baal, which symbolized a popular deity to both the Egyptians and the Hebrews.

In today's world, we do not understand this repeated stubborn and rebellious behavior because we are not confronted with awesome displays of power by hybrid creatures on a daily basis. However, if we consider the effects on a politically mistreated race of people living out their daily lives with a plethora of powerful demi-gods, then the picture suddenly becomes clearer. These hybrids conceivably were conducting unexplainable feats of magic and demanding absolute fealty, so it should not be too difficult for us to realize the Hebrew people were not purposely trying to infuriate God or even appear ungrateful for his protection. Instead, the very practical reason for casting the golden calf while camped at the base of Sinai was most likely intended to replace the loss of Moses, whom the Hebrews feared dead, thus logically reasoning that their direct access to this new god (the Lord) had been severed as well. Lest we forget, Moses was on top of a mountain for 40 days and nights surrounded by swirling rifts of fire, billowing clouds of smoke, striking bolts of lightning, and ear-splitting claps of thunder. The Israelites were absolutely terrified of this awesome display of power and justifiably assumed no human, including Moses, could have possibly survived such an ordeal.

What appears to be a defiant and ignorant stubbornness displayed by the Hebrews could also be viewed as a very logical and practical act of survival. It is quite possible the idol worship practiced in the Old Testament was primarily for the purpose of calling on the physical presence and strength of a hybrid medium to relieve a current situation.

Today, idol worship is usually a matter of senseless traditions, vapid rhetoric, foolish incantations, and/or hedonistic ceremonies which have little to do with sudden appearances or unexplainable feats of magic. In the time period during the development of the Hebrew nation it was an all together different situation, and it was simply going to take some time to effectively wean the Hebrews away from their ancestral habits. This was the primary reason God did not immediately rush them over to the Promised Land. He was keenly aware of the fact that idol worship had gained a popular foothold and was flourishing through the direct influence of hybrids that also inhabited the Middle East area. This fact is scripturally documented when the Hebrew spies reported the presence of incredibly

## IN THE BEGINNING

oversized city walls and gates, and infested with giant masculine warriors who patrolled many of the military targets which would eventually have to be attacked and neutralized by the Hebrew army (Numbers 13:25-33). In verse 33, the spies specifically identified the presence of nephilim descending from Anak's lineage!

The underlying truth here is that there were still hybrids existing and they held unexplainable secret powers which awed civilizations such as the Egyptians and their once captive Hebrew workforce. However, without the ability to rally support around a strategic objective such as an immortal fruit tree, they became just another local sorcerer in the pack. The hybrid nephilim could still gather a following, but there was no focused objective like the Tree of Life to keep humans in line. This meant God-ordained challengers like Moses were now free to point out the advantages of trusting his Lord who most certainly had human interests at heart.

The process was gradual; while God was leading his chosen people away from the evil influences represented by the hybrids, it was very important that this was done by choice, and in the face of adversity, because it was their nature, as it is ours today, to better appreciate and value something if there is a memorable struggle associated with it. Once the Hebrew survivors finally understood the evil agendas of the hybrids, they realized how they had been duped for so long and they readily began the process of embracing their true Creator. They were well aware that God had plans to build a mighty earthly empire using the Hebrew nation as its powerful foundation. When this conversion was complete, God could then undertake to war on the hybrids and finally eradicate them. This was the plan...but as history unfolds, we unfortunately learn that the habit of turning back to those rascally hybrids and their idolatrous worship was a frustratingly strong tendency for the Hebrews to break.

By the time the children of Israel arrived in the Promised Land, things were different. Because of their stubborn resistance to the Lord's instructions, they had been reduced to wandering aimlessly in the wilderness for so long that most of the original exodus participants had died of old age. The new razor-honed, battle-hardened generation entering Canaan finally "*got the memo*" and maintained a zealous respect for the power of their Lord. As the Israelites were soon to learn, these newly acquired skills would become crucial since the scriptures indicated that the Promised Land was still heavily infested with nephilim as well as the pagan humans who worshiped them.

It goes without saying that local idol worshipers as well as their hybrid counterparts were well informed of the fierce reputation which preceded the advancing Hebrew army. They were also keenly aware of the powerful God who protected them, so most of the inhabitants throughout Canaan were justifiably full of apprehension as this powerful military machine approached their borders. Coincidentally, it appears God was ready to start bringing these hybrid blasphemers to justice, so this is why military commanders such as Joshua and Gideon were instructed to ruthlessly attack specific cities, killing men, women, children, and even livestock without mercy! This sounds extremely brutal and ruthless to us, but the primary reason behind these vicious attacks had to be that these cities were infested by evil hybrid creatures that were idolized by the local populous, thus indirectly responsible for the perverse and immoral behavior which permeated all life forms coming into contact with them. Of course, we now understand these hybrids were literally the devil's spawn with no hope of salvation and their usefulness here on Earth was running out.

The Bible makes it very clear that the ultimate purpose for this aggressive elimination program was to prevent the Israelites from inter-breeding with any survivors after the Hebrew invasions had been completed. More importantly, this author believes the “no-quarter-given” campaign of annihilation was initiated by the righteous indignation of the Lord and the strategic objective was to permanently disrupt any further propagation of this half-human, half-alien infestation. In other words, the Lord used the oldest military strategy in the books...divide and conquer!

Sadly, we learn the Israelites sometimes failed to carry out these extermination orders, so it raises an alarming question; is it possible there could still be remnants of these evil hybrid creatures roaming the Earth today? Is it not possible the anti-Christ could spring from one of these sleeper cells? If so, the big question pulling on our collective intellects is how Lucifer will somehow manage to, as the Bible indicates in the book of Revelation, *deceive the very elect!* Could it be possible Lucifer's deceptive promise of eternal life will be a centralizing focus again through the use of hybrid progeny?

Now that we understand where the nephilim came from, it again raises the root question, “Where did the original sires recorded in Genesis 6:1

as sons of God come from and how many were there?” The answer is self-evident because, if we turn to the Bible, we learn in Revelation 12:3-9 that when war was declared in heaven the host siding with Lucifer was at or near 33 percent of the total galactic census. We do not know what 33 percent represents in terms of sheer numbers, but at least the mystery guests have been identified and we know there were more than just a few of these malevolent space invaders heading towards Earth. As discussed earlier, the Bible informs us angels do not marry, which means we are left to conclude these raucous celestial visitors must have come from other areas of the heavenly hierarchy, with a singular purpose to “sow their oats!” Or did they perhaps have other agendas?

By now, it should be apparent to all of us that there was a far deeper and more clandestine reason to this invasion, for when piecing the Old Testament clues together with unearthed archeological inscriptions, we are able to recognize the unmistakable fact that the ultimate battle plan of Lucifer and his legions was to stamp out the *Homo sapiens* seed and replace it with a loyal satanic hybrid, thereby negating the soon to be recorded Biblical prophecies that Jesus Christ would be born, as a direct descendant of *man*, to save the human race.

*This* was Lucifer’s underlying objective and his battle strategy was simple. If there were no *Homo sapiens* left on Earth, then Christ could not possibly be born as a man, so prophecy could not be fulfilled and God’s original creation would have been permanently destroyed. To put it in simpler words: *Lions three, Christians nothing!* This strategy, if successful, would also pave the way for Lucifer to solidify his case against God and perhaps eventually overthrow the very Creator Himself.

The self-evident truth is that this insidious genetic manipulation was not just a localized earthly disturbance meant to simply claim human converts to Lucifer’s way of thinking. It was a brilliantly conceived and protracted universal campaign launched with all the malicious resources Lucifer could muster against the Creator, while cleverly placing man as the **Expendable Pawn** in this epic struggle. Before the Flood and even afterwards, Lucifer’s entire strategy absolutely depended on the seed of every last *Homo sapiens* to be subjugated or wiped out, thus ending God’s creation forever!

These alien sons of God were obviously more powerful than humans since it is apparent they had the ability to travel through space, coming and going as they pleased. The fact that man seemed so gullible by welcoming this assimilation with open arms causes one to ponder what technological wonders our ancestors witnessed, what lies and promises must have been told, and what powers these evil sons of God could have passed along to their hybrid offspring in order to facilitate their sinister battle plan.

There is an overwhelming corroboration of evidence indicating that Greek legends might actually be stories about *real life* individuals referred to in the Bible as well as in several archaeological references as the "*legends-of-old*." It is generally understood that these ancient hero stories were handed down via oral tradition, artistic carvings, and preserved writings which the Greeks adopted and then elevated in their art and literature. If this is the case, then the super-powerful Greek Pantheon of gods which included Zeus, Apollo, Artemis, Athena, Ares, Hermes, Dionysus, Demeter, Hephaestus, Helios, Aphrodite, and Poseidon might actually be traced back to the Antediluvial arrival of the evil sons of God.

Ancient Greek mythology is riddled with stories about sexual liaisons between humans and gods which produced unusually powerful abilities in many of their legendary progeny. Even as Greece was forging its first unified empire, we read several accounts about their leaders supposedly mixing it up with "the gods" in order to gain ascendancy over each others' independent Free States. Alexander's mother, Olympias, made several public references to the fact that Alexander was the result of a sexual liaison between Zeus and herself and not, as history records, the son of Philip II of Macedon. In support of this claim, Plutarch noted that Philip purposely avoided Olympias' bed after her encounter with Zeus because of her sudden obsession with snakes. This fact is interesting since the snake was the creature chosen by Lucifer to mask his identity when first appearing to man.

Unfortunately, Alexander bought into his mother's legend of divine birth by mistakenly proclaiming himself to be a god after conquering Persia, not realizing of course, that since his mother was human it would only result in making him a half-god. On the other hand, it very well could

mean Alexander might actually have been the result of a sexual liaison between his mother and some alien son of God that may have participated in the star wars rebellion mentioned in the Bible. Alexander the Great was unusually conscious of his destiny, thus becoming extremely gifted as a global strategist, military commander, and national affairs administrator.

What this also means is the legendary Greek demi-god heroes such as Achilles, Hector, Paris, Ajax, etc. could, in fact, have been *nephilim* progeny originating from the alien sons of God who came back after the Flood and again took earthly wives. When one reads from Homer's *Iliad*, there is a prevailing impression that these legendary gods and demi-gods rarely gave a thought to the conditions and privations of the common men they controlled in the brutal wars waged against one another. If these "*legends of old*" such as those recorded in Greek mythology have any basis in truth, then one shudders to think what kind of dark and unforgiving world our early human ancestors would have had to live in?

There is a series of books written by Zachariah Sitchen called *The Earth Chronicles*<sup>18</sup> which this author highly recommends if the reader desires a unique but challenging view of where we came from along with a chilling yet thought provoking description of the world our early ancestors inhabited. Please understand this recommendation comes with a cautionary caveat because some of the conclusions Mr. Sitchen arrives at will, to say the least, be extremely controversial.

In a nutshell, Mr. Sitchen presents an intriguing story about a race of alien creatures called the Annunaki who arrived on this planet approximately 25,000 years ago in search of gold dust deposits needed to stabilize their home planet's atmosphere, which was being threatened by changes in its orbital path. Of course, they found plentiful gold sources, but the Annunaki also quickly discovered the deposits were difficult and labor intensive to extract.

One day, a member of the regional Annunaki governor's council observes "upright, black-headed, bi-pedal creatures" grazing in the field and proposes to cross-breed one of these unusual creatures in a special laboratory with a carefully prepared formula of Annunaki seed. The Annunaki council agrees to produce a test model which will be trained to tend a



special garden owned by one of the VIP council members. After several abortive attempts, a successful creature is finally produced and, *voila*, the Annunaki have created the first in a line of unique dedicated workers which they coin *the adam*.

Amidst several regional disputes, the work force is increased via assembly line incubation until someone has the brilliant idea to give the sexless humans sex organs so they can reproduce themselves. Well, immediately there is a problem; the Annunaki males find the improved female models irresistible and start mating with them. And, worse yet, human males begin chasing after Annunaki females! In either case, the result was a half-human, half-Annunaki hybrid which was difficult to control because they now retained some of the superior powers of the Annunaki.

What ensued was a chaotic time period marked by relentless wars and territorial disputes erupting out of petty insults and jealousies between the regional hybrid administrators. Their “cannon fodder” was, of course, the human populations who were decimated by the wars, thereby putting a strain on the available work force able to continue mining for minerals. During this period of time the Annunaki council was consumed with futile attempts to minimize warfare and squash rebellions so that production would once again resume their former quotas.

It was also during this time period the Annunaki discovered a large portion of a polar icecap that was in eminent danger of breaking off, thereby causing a massive tidal wave which threatened to submerge the entire planet and destroy all life. The council made preparations to evacuate the planet, but decided to keep this information a secret, allowing the troublesome humans and hybrids alike to be destroyed in the ensuing deluge. One council member breaks the vow of secrecy, however, and tells his pet human to build a boat which will enable him and his immediate family to successfully escape the disaster.

By now, the reader is probably scratching his head and wondering why this author would recommend such reading; especially since the story seems...well, so blasphemous with respect to the loving and caring Creator we know God to be. On the other hand, it cannot be denied that the account contains many obvious parallels with parts of the Biblical Creation event which demand an explanation.

## IN THE BEGINNING

The reason the above synopsis cannot be disregarded and instead must be taken very seriously is because it was more or less derived from thousands of clay tablets and cylinder seals discovered in Sumerian as well as other related Akkadian archaeological digs, some dating as far back as 3,500 years ago! Unfortunately, Mr. Sitchin appears to be absolutely convinced this shocking revelation actually explains our origins as well as pulls back the veil, so to speak, to reveal the “true” identity of God!

Before judging too quickly, it is important to understand that the late Mr. Sitchin possessed a very curious and inquisitive journalistic mind and he was an active enthusiast of archaeology and astronomy, although he had many scholars who challenged the integrity of his research in later years. In spite of this, the reader will note how exhaustively he builds his presentation with numerous illustrations and cross-matched references to the various decoded tablets. He also folds in numerous Biblical references as well as countless other archaeological discoveries which support his case for the authenticity of this startling tale. The challenge with Mr. Sitchin’s theories does not necessarily lie with his methodical research and presentation, but with his conclusions. If, as he states, a mercenary God created man to simply become a slave to the needs of a super race of beings, then this could never be a God any sensible Christian would believe in.

So, how does one argue with the obvious documented facts translated from the ancient tablets so meticulously carved in stone? Actually, the key to solving this enigma is straightforward and can be found within the very tablets themselves. The stone-carved records indicate in, numerous instances, that human scribes were surrogates of the Annunaki and thus they studiously recorded what they were *told* to write down! So, one has to ask what would be the purpose for carving a conflicting story like this in stone. Could the ultimate purpose be none other than to confuse the facts...the Biblical facts, that is, about whom we are as well as who God is? This begins to look more like Lucifer up to his own tricks now, doesn’t it?

If we study these writings carefully, we can come to the equally plausible conclusion that the Annunaki were, in fact, none other than the alien sons of God, mentioned in the Old Testament, who swooped down out

of the heavens to partake of carnal knowledge with human females! And, if this is the case, then we now know the true author of this “yellow journalism” as well as the strategic intent for its eventual discovery and dissemination. Perhaps Mr. Sitchen was simply guilty of drinking Lucifer’s “grape punch,” becoming yet another victim of a well planned hoax perpetuated from antiquity to place confusion and doubt in the hearts of men.

That being said, *The Earth Chronicles* is still a riveting read because it presents one of the most complete and detailed presentations of the truly brutal and alien world our early ancestors had to daily survive in...and there is little doubt this could have been exaggerated by the scribes who both observed it as well as were themselves sometimes subjected to it!

## IN THE BEGINNING

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

- <sup>1</sup> Elrington, Charles Richard, ed. *The Whole Works of the Most Rev. James Ussher, D.D. II*, Dublin: Hodges and Smith. 1847.
- <sup>2</sup> Eade, Alfred Thompson *New Panorama Bible Study Course No. 1: The Plan of the Ages*, May 01, 1988.
- <sup>3</sup> Walter, Robert C. *Age of Lucy and the First Family*. Geology (GSA Publications) 22 (January): 6–10. 1994.

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lucy\\_\(Australopithecus\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lucy_(Australopithecus))

- <sup>4</sup> Duarte, C.; Maurício, J.; Pettitt, P.B.; Souto, P.; Trinkaus, E.; van der Plicht, H.; Zilhão, J. *Neanderthal age; The early Upper Paleolithic human skeleton from the Abrigo do Lagar Veldo (Portugal) and modern human emergence in Iberia*. Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences **96** (13): 7604–9. Bibcode: 1999PNAS...96.7604D. doi:10.1073/pnas.96.13.7604 PMC 22133. PMID 10377462 June 1999.
- <sup>5</sup> Thieme, Jr., Robert B. *Creation Chaos and Restoration*: Filiquarian Publishing, LLC. 1974.
- <sup>6</sup> MacErlean, Fergal *First Neanderthal cave paintings discovered in Spain*. New Scientist. Retrieved 10 February 2012.

Amos, Jonathan. *Red dot becomes oldest cave art*, BBC

Gizmodo, *These Are the Earliest Human Paintings Ever*

Hoover, M. *Art of the Paleolithic and Neolithic Eras*, from *Art History Survey 1*, San Antonio College (July 2001; accessed 11 June 2005).

- <sup>7</sup> Thompson “*I have throughout assumed that the baktuns were grouped, not in 13’s, but in 20’s, for the evidence supporting a vigesimal count of baktuns in Dresden and at Palenque and Copan is too strong to be overridden.*” (1960 Appendix IV pp.314, 316, 148, 149)

Grofe, Michael John. *The Serpent Series: Precession in the Maya Dresden Codex*: “On occasion, the Maya also recorded intervals of time even greater than 13 B’ak’tuns, such as one Piktun, composed of 20 B’ak’tuns. This is relevant to the current discussion concerning the Serpent Series.” Page 55. 2007.

Martin Time Kingship and *The Maya Universe* “...we have clear evidence that the current Bak’tun cycle does not conclude at 13, as the last one did, but advances to 20. In other words, 13.0.0.0.0 will be followed by 14.0.0.0.0, 15.0.0.0.0, and so on to 19.0.0.0.0. A text at the site of Palenque, Mexico, makes this very plain when it records the completion of 1 Piktun, the next unit above the Bak’tun, in 4772 CE.”

- <sup>8</sup> Steven Mithen, *After the Ice: A global human history, 20,000-5000 BC*. Harvard University Press, Cambridge MA, Pp. 65–69, 89–90. 2004.
- <sup>9</sup> Jericho, Enciclopedia Britannica

## IN THE BEGINNING

Mithen, Steven *After the ice: a global human history, 20,000-5000 BC* (1st Harvard University Press pbk. ed. ed.). Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press. p. 57. 2006.

- <sup>10</sup> Information on oldest Sumer settlement: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eridu>
- <sup>11</sup> Information on Assyrian library cuneiform collection <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ashurbanipal>
- <sup>12</sup> Morse, Henry M. *The Biblical Basis for Modern Science*: Master Books, Green Forest, p.417. 1984.
- <sup>13</sup> Definition of *nephilim*, i.e. root word *naphal*: Strong's Concordance ; 5307.naphal (<http://biblehub.com/hebrew/5307.htm>)
- <sup>14</sup> McTernan, John P. *As America Has Done To Israel*: Anchor Distributors. April 28, 2008.
- <sup>15</sup> Richardson, Joel *The Islamic Antichrist*: WND Books; 2<sup>nd</sup> edition. July 28, 2009.
- <sup>16</sup> Lorton, David — translator. *Gods and Men in Egypt: 3000 BCE to 395 CE*. Cornell University Press.
- <sup>17</sup> Rameses II, one of the reigning pharaohs during the time of Moses: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pharaohs\\_in\\_the\\_Bible](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pharaohs_in_the_Bible).
- <sup>18</sup> Sitchin, Zachariah. *The Wars of Gods and Men, #3 Earth Chronicles*. Avon Books (NYC), March 2007. First published 1985 by Harper, June 1, 1999.
- Sitchin, Zachariah. *The 12th Planet, #1 Earth Chronicles*. Avon Books (NYC) 2007.
- Sitchin, Zachariah. *Genesis Revisited*, Avon Books (NYC) 1990.

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

❖  
**NOAH'S WORLD**  
❖

Akkadian tablets provide us with one perspective of the kind of social environment our Antediluvian ancestors were exposed to, but in order to get another glimpse of what Noah's world might have looked like as a result of the gene war, we shall draw the reader's attention to a somewhat controversial source of information that reveals the possibility of Antediluvians being exposed to modern day, high-tech gadgetry.

Many of us assume that the existence of a super-civilization in our past is highly unlikely, but sometimes we are confronted with the visual reality of *Oop.Arts* (Out-of-place Artifacts)<sup>1</sup> and suddenly we are jolted from our positions of complacency because they are difficult to explain. Yet many of these strange and mysterious discoveries demand attention because they appear to stand in stark contrast to our pre-conceived concepts of the kind of world our pre-Flood ancestors may have lived in. This is especially true if approached from a Darwinian Evolutionist's point of view, since one of the foundations of their belief system is primarily rooted in the slow but steady ladder of transmutational evolutionary processes which, by design, leave no place for the unexplainable development of technologies matching or surpassing present-day wonders. Perhaps it is because ooparts provide a strong argument that ancient technologies may have been advanced and in some cases, far beyond our present capabilities, and that drives our curiosity despite the apparent controversies surrounding them.

Today, for instance, we commonly use Digital Versatile Disc (DVD) technology to store information in the form of movies, picture catalogs, and computer software. We started using DVD technology in the 1990's, but if you were suddenly transported back to the 1960's and handed someone a DVD, do you think they would guess what it was? They would probably have no idea that it was capable of storing more than 4.8 gigabytes of digitized information, which is more than enough room to contain a full



feature-length movie. The first thing they would probably notice was that it was flat and could fly through the air like a saucer if it was tossed. They might also remark about the pretty rainbow sheen resulting when light passes over its surface. Some creative soul might even get the inspiration to pass a string through the hole and convert it into a stunning window mobile, or perhaps they would give it to a jeweler who would carve it up to make smaller pieces of collectable jewelry...never realizing, of course, that this would permanently destroy any information contained within the microscopic grooves. With this example in mind, we should ask ourselves, "How many advanced and unexplainable artifacts have been lost or are gathering dust in basements somewhere because we are unable to figure out what they are?" Let us examine a few oopart examples, but keep in mind that the subject must be approached with a jaundiced eye because this particular field of study is literally riddled with numerous forgeries and false claims.

On April 10, 1967, a strange discovery was noted in several newspapers across the nation regarding an artifact, along with some human remains, discovered at the Rocky Point Mine in Gulman, Colorado. News articles recorded that excavators found human bones embedded in a vein of silver at an approximate depth of 400 feet below the surface; along with the bones, the miners uncovered a 4-inch tempered copper arrowhead. By geological standards, this find was estimated to be several millions of years old. Neither human remains nor the arrowhead belonged there, and to this day, are absolutely unexplainable.

The relevancy of this particular discovery is that it challenges both the Darwinian Evolutionary theory as well as the literal interpretation of the Biblical Creation event. The building blocks of Darwin's theory are foundationally supported by the premise of orderly and consistent developmental progression over undefined spans of time, yet here we are presented with unexplainable evidence that this order was somehow bridged by an example of technology which should not have occurred until several millions of years later!

Since this discovery was imbedded in a vein of coal, we can also recognize the impossibility of interpreting the Scriptures literally with respect to the elapsed time period allotted for the Genesis Creation event. Setting

aside the controversies surrounding the actual evolution and age of Planet Earth, it is impossible to disregard the actual time it takes to produce a vein of coal. At a minimum, this cooking process consumes hundreds of thousands of years, which should immediately prompt us to examine more closely the literal seven-day interpretation.

In June 1851, the *Scientific American* (Vol. 7, p. 289) challenged, but in the same article, reported the discovery of a metallic vase which had been dynamited out of solid pudding stone rock at Meeting House Hill in Dorchester, Massachusetts. According to the account, the object was in two parts but, when fitted together, formed a bell-shaped vessel approximately 4.5" high with a width of 6.5" at the base and 2.5" at the top. The vessel is forged out of a composite metal containing some silver and is approximately one-eighth-inch thick. The exquisitely crafted object is topped by six figures of a flower bouquet inlaid with pure silver detail accompanied by a delicate twisting wreath treatment around the base. The carving and inlaying are masterfully done by a very skilled craftsman, but the questions remain; who did it, from what age did it originate, and how did it get fifteen feet below ground in a vein of solid rock estimated to be several millions of years old? It should be noted the article claimed that since the vase was discovered amongst the blast rubble, it is possible this artifact could be a typical Victorian-era vase which was simply lying on top of the ground when the blast occurred. On the other hand, *Scientific American* has a sterling reputation for methodical and accurate reporting; thus, the controversy surrounding this particular artifact is still hotly debated.

While excavating an Egyptian tomb near Saqqara in 1823, archaeologists came upon a small birdlike object made of sycamore wood, estimated to have been made around 200 BC<sup>2</sup>. The discovery was largely forgotten and languished in various museums for over 80 years, until the Wright Brothers made their historic flight in 1903, which subsequently ushered in the era of aviation. When examined by a new team of Egyptologists, they decided the birdlike artifact had an uncanny resemblance to an airplane.

In the early 1970's, a team of aviation engineers was assembled to further explore the airplane hypothesis. Their findings revealed that the 5.6-inch-long body was aerodynamically sound. As a matter of fact, one engineer

noted a remarkable similarity between the Saqqara bird and a new oblique-winged aircraft which NASA had on the planning table at that time. The conclusion of the experts excited the media when it was announced that the 2,000-year-old object was possibly a model airplane featuring a very sophisticated downward dip of the wings (called a reverse dihedral) which had the ability to support enormous payloads at very low stall speeds. It was noted that this design had been successfully engineered into the then present day Concorde airplane which was capable of producing maximum lift without sacrificing its airspeed. What was the motivation and purpose for ancient craftsmen to produce such a model? Most importantly, who conceived this advanced design and what technology, either existing or observed, created the inspiration?

Perhaps the most baffling of all the oopart discoveries made to date originated with some Russian gold prospectors located on the Narada River in the Ural Mountains. Between the years 1991-1993, these gold miners started finding unusually machined and mostly spiral-shaped metal objects between depths of 10 to 40 feet along the banks of the riverbed<sup>3</sup>. The spiral-formed objects look similar to coiled springs and are composed of various composite metals, namely copper, tungsten, and molybdenum. Additionally, many pieces seemed to fit inside each other, denoting some very precise machining. The most inexplicable fact which seems to fly in the face of common logic is that these objects are all very small, ranging from a maximum size of 1.2 inches down to an incredible 1/10,000 of an inch!

The first of these discoveries was made in the 1990's; however, additional objects are still being found to this day and there are now thousands of examples of these curious artifacts in existence. It should also be noted the search area continues to broaden, now including the Kozhim, Balbanyu, Vtvisty, and Lapkhevozh Rivers, which are also located within the vicinity of the Narada.

Fortunately for the skeptical at heart, it just so happens there were non-related scientific expeditions being conducted in the vicinity where the gold prospectors were working at that time, so the curious discoveries were brought to the immediate attention of unimpeachable scientific and geological professionals from the Russian Academy of Sciences in

Syktyvka, Moscow, and St. Petersburg. There was also team members from the Helsinki Scientific Institute located in Finland. To date, their collective scientific examinations and subsequent research have only served to further exacerbate the already unfathomable possibilities surrounding these objects.

Early on it was suspected the artifacts were modern day manufactured parts, since the area of the discoveries was also a known flight path for a nearby Russian military installation. It was thought that these objects could logically have been the byproduct of a waste disposal site or perhaps parts from the crash of some experimental aircraft. Those presumptions were quickly discarded, however, since the tiny and sometimes microscopic sizes and shapes did not presuppose any recognizable functionality, thereby rendering them useless to any identifiable machinery the Russian military had in existence.

Many of these objects would be more appropriately used in miniaturized mechanical systems we have just recently begun to coin as nanomachines; however, the obvious challenge to this conclusion is that nano-technology happens to be in early stages of development as we speak! The initial nanoartifacts were discovered almost twenty years ago when nanotechnology was pretty much theoretical and speculative, that is, more likely contemplated by sci-fi authors or the local Mensa campus think tank crowd. It is now plainly obvious, from the depths at which these artifacts have been found, that they could only have come from a technology dating back at least a few thousand years ago. In fact, the layers in which the artifacts were discovered are characterized as gravel and detritus deposits more appropriately identified within the upper Pleistocene level. This translates, in geological timeline terms; they would have been created approximately 100,000 years ago.

As stated previously, the artifacts are made of composite materials which the Russian scientists were able to quickly identify. The challenge is that materials such as tungsten or molybdenum are dense metals with heavy atomic weights, thus requiring temperatures as high as 6,100 degrees Fahrenheit just to melt them. The extremely high temperatures alone add to the technical enigmatic properties of these artifacts, but further added to this dilemma is the fact that these rare natural elements are generally

used for hardening steel and giving it corrosion-resistant properties, thus making them ideal components, except for their microscopic size, for the manufacture of high-stress weapons and vehicular armor.

These objects are obviously the product of an inexplicable and highly advanced technology; they bear a remarkable resemblance to control elements used in micro-miniature devices representing our very latest technology. So the challenging questions remain; why would exotic metals be used to make such tiny parts? What did these completed machines look like, and for what purposes were they created? Lastly, who was able to harness such a technology and from where did these creative individuals come?

Of course, there are many seemingly legitimate discoveries which eventually turn out to be complete hoaxes, thus adding to the confusion and validity of genuine ooparts which truly demand our attention. One such discovery, made in 1927 remained, for a while, one of the most celebrated enigmas of all times. A British explorer by the name of F.A. Mitchell-Hedges claimed his daughter discovered a crystal skull near the Mayan ruins of Lubaantun in Belize (then British Honduras). Though the original story of her discovery has since been discounted, Anna Mitchell-Hedges remained the owner of this artifact after her controversial father passed on. Anna resided in Canada and until her death in 2007 frequently displayed the skull on various tours. The Mitchell-Hedges skull is made of clear quartz crystal, and both cranium and detachable mandible are believed to have come from the same solid block. It weighs 11.7 pounds and is about five inches high, five inches wide, and seven inches long. The object was stated to be approximately 5,000 years old and, except for slight anomalies in the temples and cheekbones, is an anatomically correct replica of a human skull.

To compound this enigma, there were numerous other crystal skull “discoveries” around the world and, though dating varied between 5,000 to 160,000-plus years old, all specimens continued to defy logic or any attempts to explain the purpose for their existence. Everything known about lapidary work indicated that these skulls should have shattered, fractured, or fallen apart during the carving process. Because there are so many of them “discovered” in diverse archaeological digs located all over

the planet, the most perplexing questions centered on their purpose. For as far back as recorded history can be remembered, the skull has always represented death, so why painstaking craftsmanship would be lavished over such a macabre object was a complete enigma.

Three of these skulls found their way into some of our most prestigious museums and were proudly displayed as unexplainable works of art. Fairly recently, after it was announced by the Quai Branly Museum, located in Paris, that their crystal skull was a fraud, both the British Museum and the Smithsonian National Museum contracted the services of anthropologist Jane Walsh, who proceeded to subject the artifacts to an electron microscope which scanned gold-coated silicone castings of the objects' surfaces. At magnifications of 50 to 100 times, even the untrained eye could quickly spot the differences between markings made by the use of ancient tools versus modern ones. Her conclusions were the skulls were all cut, honed, and polished by modern lapidary tools using industrial diamonds and polishing machinery. Furthermore, they were decidedly not created by ancient Mesoamerican craftsmen. So much for the "mystery of the crystal skulls"...sorry Indiana Jones!

Ooparts are, at the very least, disturbing because they demand logical explanations for their existence in a time when humans were *supposed* to be in the very early stages of technological development. To the contrary, the Bible as well as countless secular writings and archaeological discoveries seem to point to the fact that ancient mankind regularly witnessed, paid tribute to, or were at least exposed to examples of super-humans with superior technologies.

On the other hand, if we accept that advanced technologies were present, it means they could have been created and deployed by our previously identified alien sons of God who were busy populating the earth with hybrids while, at the same time, controlling technologically-naive humans. It means that though Antediluvians were routinely exposed to these unexplainable wonders, they were not necessarily privy to the vast amounts of technical information needed to duplicate them. As an example, how many readers could explain the science behind an ordinary automobile spark plug or much less be able to create one from scratch? What is truly disconcerting, even to the possibility of Oopart discoveries, is we have

perhaps been overly smug in our presumption that we are the first and only generation of humans to have been exposed to the benefits and horrors associated with “modern day” technology.

At this point, it would be interesting to return for a moment to the earlier mentioned hypothetical modern day archaeological group discovering the Garden of Eden. We have already established the fact that life would become extremely hellish as a result of a discovery like this, but now let us imagine the country claiming the discovery was subsequently “blessed” with a presence miraculously appearing in their midst as a mediator with unexplainable super-human capabilities. What individual would not turn a blind eye to this alien’s curious carnal lust or other seemingly “minor” social infractions? After all, this super-being promises to defeat all access attempts by other countries while assisting the owners to control this priceless discovery; so what if he seems barbaric, ruthless, and calculating by human standards.

Of course, it goes without saying that this visitor would publicly demonstrate his self-proclaimed ability to override Eden’s security, which mysteriously still exists, and gain access to its eternal life-giving fruit (note we said access and not distribution, because that would never do)! Given this scenario, *who* would not readily dedicate their time, resources, and industry in addition to giving total allegiance to such an individual? If we transplant this same scenario back into the time period before the Flood, it should not be difficult for us to imagine the probable outcome, since it lifts the veil, so to speak, to give us a more realistic glimpse into the central motivation and preoccupation of mankind in Noah’s day.

So, what was daily life like back in Noah’s time? It is conceivable that the pre-diluvial world was much different than what we know and experience today. This world would have had a comfortable temperature which was maintained throughout by a thin vapor envelope of water surrounding the planet and shielding it against direct sun rays. If there were winds present, they would have been nothing more than gentle breezes, so the concept of wind-driven technologies would not have been evident or important during this time. The cooler temperatures at night would precipitate gentle mists which formed from water vapor in the air as well as moisture rising up from underground aquifers. It would appear as a heavy

mist or fog which bathed everything in a shower of tiny water droplets. These tiny droplets glistened in the moonlight then quickly evaporated with the morning sunrise<sup>4</sup>. This unique meteorological cycle would have resulted in the complete absence of clouds. It would also feature a uniform, but somewhat humid daytime climate, similar to what we experience in tropical environments today.

This does not preclude the fact that survival was decidedly hard in some areas, with the exception of the forbidden sector in and immediately surrounding the geographical location of the Garden of Eden. After expulsion from the Garden, the Bible states that man would have to survive through hard labor, so there was an overlapping matrix of areas where underground aquifers ran deep or there was an absence of symbiotic ecosystems capable of sustaining large population centers. This would drive small independent communities towards established centers of civilization where cumulative efforts might pay off. Because access to the Tree of Life would have been the ultimate human objective, these cities and villages would all vie for strategic occupation of areas situated as close as possible near the vicinity of the Garden, thus creating congestion and high-stakes competition for farming plots, housing, markets, and connecting trade routes. This would also drive the necessity for the establishment of regional bureaucracies in order to prevent total chaos and civil breakdown within and between local districts.

Enter the alien infestation; it was sudden and conducted with surgical precision. The sons of God divided their numbers; attacked strategically targeted villages, effectively destroyed any resistance, and then confronted the female survivors with the ultimatum of submitting to their sexual advances or suffer the consequences. Obviously the earth women were given a choice, but then the overpowering fact that mating with a god and thereby securing exalted status for themselves and their offspring ... well it was apparently a seductive allure which few females could resist.

The alien sons of God possessed superior intellect, superior strengths, and were armed with superior weaponry, thus the futile attempts of mortal men were no match against these overwhelming advantages. Naturally there were earth men who instantly recognized these super-human capabilities and subsequently encouraged their women to breed with their



new rulers in exchange for special favors and attention. There were also other male survivors, perhaps composed of former husbands, who were consequently overcome with jealousy or indignation and rebelled in the only way they could, using armed resistance and clandestine guerrilla tactics to harass the invaders. This posed a temporary threat to the overall alien campaign and became a major source of contention which sparked countless battles and threatened to destroy the alien efforts towards establishing stability and control.

Of course these alien sons of God cared little for the continuance of the human race but were studiously observant and understood its basic natures intimately. They effectively deployed their obvious intellectual advantages towards the strategy of pitting one human against the other in a relentless cycle of violence. Naturally the primary objective of the aliens was to obliterate the human seed, thus the rebel resistance generated the necessity to establish a permanent military presence in order to “protect” the general public while, at the same time, cleverly justifying their reactive militancy on the escalating levels of rebel violence. Behind the scenes the alien mantra would have been something like, *“If we cannot breed them out, then let us wipe them out!”*

Eventually the primary weapon utilized by the sons of God became the hybrid offspring who were specially nurtured and inculcated with detailed instructions centered on promoting the hybrid species above that of their mere human counterparts. The hybrids were effectively able to initiate general strategies and conduct tactical missions while, at the same time, learning the politics associated with the subjugation and control of the masses. As time passed selected hybrids were promoted from the ranks, on the basis of merit and achievement. This recognition resulted from battlefield promotion as well as successes in the bedroom, because impregnating earth females with their hybrid seed was equally important to the perpetuation of the hybrid species.

Some hybrids became recognized leaders and were given additional governing powers and responsibilities. As a result more bureaucracies were established in the form of regional governorships to accommodate the new candidates. These recently promoted hybrid governors were not selected by a democratic process, but rather through a member of ruthless

succession campaigns based on a series of restrictive laws initially established by the alien sons of God to control bloodlines. Keep in mind the alien power base was their superior knowledge, as well as their technical capabilities, so state secrets would have been closely guarded and handed out like a kosher butcher would hand out pork sausages.

Rebellions were brutally squelched and civic control was effectively accomplished through a feudalistic form of government where land was divided into sections and humans were accordingly grouped. The administrative ruling class was always represented by the hybrid demi-gods, who answered to a particular son of God overseer. The alien sons of God elected to operate behind the scenes and were therefore absent most of the time, since their regional palace was only meant as a summer retreat. Most of their time was spent at the main residence located somewhere else in an isolated area on the planet, or perhaps an off-world location in another part of the universe...after all, they were familiar with the science of multi-dimensional shape-shifting and space travel.

While the sons of God were absent the hybrid demi-gods were left with a considerable amount of autonomy, since their inherited superior intellect along with their special capabilities made them the absolute undisputed leader of the local pack. They were, however, provided with those necessary yet cumbersome instructions which they were obligated to follow to the letter. Most routines centered on the protection of the hybrid bloodlines because this was a genetic war; so who bedded whom was strictly monitored to make sure the human seed was being altered or destroyed without unnecessarily weakening the capabilities of the hybrid offspring. It is likely possible that the necessity to document hybrid marital controls and family trees during this time laid the foundation for the proclivity to continue with this absurd notion long after it had any basis in reality, that being the expectations resulting from the blending of alien blood with human blood.

Despite the fact that the half-alien, half-human hybrids may have long since vanished, there remain countless examples of marital manipulation, for purposes of tracking nobility, centuries after the Antediluvian time period. Such rules and rituals were especially documented and asserted throughout ancient and medieval history. It was not until after the French

Revolution that the right to achieve office or rule over others was considered by the measure of a person's *ability* rather than the deeply ingrained assumption of inherited birthright. The infamous "War of the Roses," which raged throughout Britain during the 1600's, resulted in the death of numerous princes and princesses and was the direct result of ridiculous family disputes over patents of nobility, which in turn dictated the right of ascension to the throne.

Perhaps the hybrid's mutant DNA, which was passed on via acts of intimacy, affected Antediluvians in much the same way as sexually transmitted diseases create health challenges in humans today. This would mean the determination of whether or not to place one's self in harm's way had to be an individual choice which each man or woman made. The disgustingly sadistic and beastly exploits of these hybrids along with their occasional rebellion against the ruling alien sons of God establishment are recorded in numerous archaeological discoveries, especially relics and legends associated with Greek mythology, so it is obvious this campaign was no picnic for the alien sons of God who occasionally had to return and let some hybrid heads roll in order to effectively reestablish control.

A few human sycophants shared high positions with the alien sons of God, even to the point of studiously recording their abhorrent sex-centered lifestyles for posterity. For the most part, the only beings to share any real power with the sons of God were their hybrid offspring, which were proliferating at a prodigious rate, for the singular purpose of crowding out the human seed. On the one hand, these hybrids were imparted with superior capabilities, but alas they were still part human with the natural human desire to dominate and ultimately eliminate their peers as well as destroy their subservient counterparts. This led to numerous clashes and border disputes as they and their armies vied against one another for dominance. Hybrid propaganda would of course state differently, but in the end the news headlines were never good for humans. When war was declared, humans suffered and died under miserable conditions.

The human masses were kept in line through a system of total dependency for food, shelter, and protection, all emanating from the local hybrid governor. In exchange for total allegiance, the hybrids promised peace and protection, but then they would turn around and arm their subservient

armies with barely understood weapons, giving them the power to pillage other population centers which posed a threat to their personal interests and agendas. These wars were sometimes launched over the silliest of trifles but were nonetheless fought, since the principle hybrid agenda was always focused on wiping out the human seed.

It is important to note that a few of the hybrids may not have been fully supportive of this unspoken objective; they were, after all, half human and thus capable of compassion. If Greek mythology is any kind of indicator, we can surely associate the propensity for individual acts of human-like compassion that may have resulted from a hybrid demi-god who felt obliged to rebel against the mandates of his superior. Of course these rare displays of compassion were usually related to misplaced incidents of envy, greed, lust, or perhaps even a jilted lover's triangle, so their fickle emotions could just as quickly swing in the opposite direction without warning. Because of this, the alien sons of God most likely would have viewed hybrids more as a means to an end...or shall we say a "necessary evil" (now there is a conundrum)! It goes without saying the hybrids were often times a troublesome lot, as recorded in numerous unearthed archaeological records and transcriptions.

To humans, the overall willingness to participate in these ongoing military campaigns was centered on the strategic access and control over the sacred neighborhood containing the Tree of Eternal Life. There was nothing more important to humans than this single resource. Alien exploitation and unexplainable capabilities or technologies, such as super human strength, complex engineering, air ships, or even sophisticated military weapons, were of secondary importance to this all-consuming human objective. To humans, anyone, including the Lord Himself (who seems to have regularly maintained a physical presence during this time), was a distraction and, in fact, considered an enemy if they acted contrary to the wishes of a particular liege's promise to govern while gaining access to the sacred fruit. The physical presence of the Tree of Life was the catalyst which allowed the alien infestation to gain control and rule through the hybrids so effectively.

It is not difficult to accept that Homo sapiens in Noah's lifetime might have been technologically naïve and, therefore, powerless to do anything

against those who controlled these superior capabilities. One can scarcely think of a more nightmarish environment than a world based on the laws of natural selection (strong survive, weak perish), devoid of any concept of good or mercy, and inhabited by evil magistrates and demi-gods all vying for control of a single geographic spot while manipulating largely agrarian populations and having the capability of backing up their interests with overwhelming force against each others' population centers.

Add to this super-charged atmosphere the promise, made by these sons of God and their hybrid offspring, to acquire eternal life-giving fruits for their subservient masses, and we can begin to understand why the Lord was essentially ignored. In fact, the Creator most likely would have been postured as the bad guy, since *He* was the only one obviously preventing access to the Garden of Eden! It is clear the aliens were most certainly succeeding in their evil plans to "breed out" the Homo sapiens' blood-line. Forced to stand by and watch humans readily give themselves over to nephilim interests would absolutely explain God's great disappointment as well as His subsequent determination to destroy what was left of His grand creation, which would, of course, include the Eden paradise that was home for the Tree of Eternal Life!

This brief account of what Noah's world might have looked and felt like is admittedly a product of this author's imagination. It was largely based on a collection of historical readings and discernments as he has interpreted them. What is important to point out is none of us were physically present in Noah's world, so the best any of us can do is examine the bits and pieces of revealed history which can then be coupled with prayerful study, scientific research, the application of physical laws, and our intuitive understanding of human nature, in order to postulate a theory of what their world may have been like.

There is a world of difference between a theoretical conclusion and a scientific fact. The American College Dictionary defines science as "a branch of knowledge or study dealing with a body of facts or truths systematically arranged and defining the operation of general laws." The operative word here is "systematically" because this best defines the empirical process of isolating and defining incremental facts which have been developed through meticulous testing and observation processes for the

purposes of developing a consistent and measurable result. As an example, there are many shapes and arrangements which can be made with a set of building blocks, but through methodical testing we have arrived at the general conclusion there is only one shape which offers the most efficiency, with regard to the number of blocks used while at the same time providing the most durable properties in terms of strength, and that is a three-sided pyramid.

On the other hand, the same dictionary defines a theory as “a coherent group of general propositions used as principles of explanation for a specific phenomenon.” This definition is the polar opposite of how a scientific process is described because it is literally riddled with uncertainties. The word “coherent” or “clear thinking” begs further clarification because the word itself is relative to a single point of view. In other words, it is similar to asking an insane person if he thinks he is crazy, in spite of what everyone else considers to be blatantly obvious! Also consider the use of the word “proposition” which can be simply defined as “an idea.” As it is used in the above definition, the phrase “general proposition” further dilutes the definition of the root word to be defined as “*any* idea.” Last but not least, there may be “principles of explanation,” as in a defined process for the methodical presentation of an idea, but to date this author has been unable to isolate those principles or recognize it as a clearly defined and universally accepted step-by-step process. On the other hand, there are clearly defined methodologies for the *delivery* of an idea, and if you doubt this, just ask any lawyer about his or her extensive scientific academia in the art of persuasion!

It is a foregone conclusion there are many more experienced and well read individuals who might bring into question certain aspects of the above dissertation of Noah's world but then that is the beauty of the debate itself. We are all dealing with the same bits and pieces of the puzzle and more importantly, we are all peers with regard to our ability to reach conclusions based on our sensate capabilities.

The most important question which begs to be asked is how the developmental processes and interpretations used by this author to arrive at a description of Noah's world differ in any way from those who would, for example, propose a theory based on the transmutational development and ascension of species *Homo sapiens* from single-celled organisms?

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

- <sup>1</sup> Noorbergen, Rene. *Secrets of the Lost Races*. Book 2. Norcom edition (1993). *Treasures of the Lost Races* Book 3.

Sitchin, Zachariah. "Journeys to the Mythical Past." Inner Traditions / Bear & Co. pp. 171–. 25 January 2011. Retrieved June 19, 2013.

- <sup>2</sup> *Pros and Cons of Saqqara Bird*: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Saqqara\\_Bird](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Saqqara_Bird).

- <sup>3</sup> Nano Artifact discovery and metallurgy: The official Scientific Research Institute for Geology and Prospecting for Precious and Non-Ferrous Metals (TsNIGRI) Website (rus) (<http://www.tsnigri.ru/>). TsNIGRI founded in 1935 as a head institute for scientific, methodical, and geological research for the creation, use and development of mineral raw materials base (MSB) of precious metals and diamond reserves.

Dunphy, Graeme. *Earth climatology and geology: Six Ages of the World*. Encyclopedia of the Medieval Chronicle. pp. 1367–1370. Leiden: Brill. 2010

Gohau, G. *A History of Geology* (Revised edition). Rutgers University Press. 1991.







  

# NIGHTFALL

  


Most of us understand our Creator to be a God of natural laws and order, so it is interesting to explore what chain of natural events could have been set in motion to create a flood with such a tremendous and chaotic upheaval, that the dramatic results can still be observed to this day. For the record, this author certainly found numerous scenarios to choose from; however, many extinction-level event candidates were quickly eliminated because they either singularly or collectively failed to harmonize with the Bible, science, archaeology, and the natural laws of nature. In some cases, a particular chain of events might seem compatible with archeological discoveries but would fall apart when placed under the scrutiny of Biblical or scientific analysis.

As an example, it is fairly unlikely the Flood was precipitated by an asteroid impact because the relatively small localized strikes such as the Tunguska Meteor, which hit Siberia in 1908<sup>1</sup>, or the Pleistocene epoch, Arizona Meteor, which caused a 1-mile diameter crater (commonly referred to by scientists as the Barringer Crater)<sup>2</sup> were both simply too small and insignificant. This fact becomes more sobering when one realizes the Arizona Meteor measured approximately 162 feet in diameter, weighed in at about 330,000 tons, and struck the Earth at about 28,600 miles per hour. The impact, in terms of sheer energy, caused a blast approximately 150 times more powerful than the atom bombs dropped on Hiroshima and Nagasaki. Both of these examples caused untold local damage, however, careful analysis ultimately reveals neither of these two examples could have created sufficient force to cause a global catastrophe such as the Biblical Flood described in Genesis 6-8.

At the other end of the spectrum are the super asteroid impacts, such as the recently discovered Sudbury event<sup>3</sup> which is believed to have caused a 160-mile diameter crater in the Great Lakes area of North America.

Another more popular but somewhat smaller impact was the Chicxulub event<sup>4</sup> which created a 110-mile diameter crater in the Yucatan Peninsula and is generally credited with precipitating the Cretaceous-Paleocene extinction level event approximately 66-million years ago. Both of these examples would have likely generated mile-high waves of water, earth, and magma so massive and all-encompassing that the planet would have been transformed into a molten fireball which would instantly consume any wooden ship such as the Ark. Logic also dictates that it would have taken several thousand years to cool and stabilize the planet back into land masses which could once again support life. In this case, the necessity for God to have sent flood waters after such a global vulcanization would have simply been overkill.

There is another popular theory, precipitated by the discovery of Sumerian tablet writings, which places the cause of the Flood emanating from a large shelf of ice.<sup>5</sup> When this shelf suddenly broke off and fell into the ocean, it caused massive tidal waves which swept over the entire surface of the globe, obliterating all life and submerging the land masses. While this is more in keeping with the use of water in the Flood account, it does not adequately address the Biblical mention or the science behind underground waters bursting forth or the sudden appearance of rain clouds emptying torrents of water from the sky. Common sense logic addresses the fact that collapsing ice shelves do not necessarily cause massive meteorological changes or earth-shattering seismic events which could rearrange the composition of continents on a global scale. Also, it would be impossible to sustain a tidal surge which would continuously submerge all land for a period of eight to ten months.

The geo-physical evidence as well as the information contained in the Biblical record is overwhelming and, therefore, it is reasonable to conclude that a natural disaster precipitated the Flood and the Flood waters completely covered *all* land masses. Unfortunately for some, this means current popular theories such as the localized flood event which supposedly occurred in the Black Sea area cannot be taken seriously. This frustratingly incomplete and naive theory purposes that a land bridge suddenly collapsed, allowing the higher levels of the Mediterranean Sea to flood through the Bosphorus Strait and into the lower-level Black Sea areas.<sup>6</sup> This, in turn, is said to have wiped out most of the civilizations within the general vicinity.

This theory would have us believe the survivors were utterly convinced that a purely localized disaster was considered a “worldwide” catastrophe by the locals because, for some unexplained reason, they just did not seem to get out much to discover it was, in fact, only a localized event. Evidently, we are to assume there were no trade routes or other commercial enterprises involving continuous and consistent communication as well as travel to surrounding areas before the land bridge broke. The theory goes on to suggest that scores of folklore stories and writings sprang out of this major catastrophe which persisted in one form or another as people immigrated away from the Black Sea area. There are some who claim that this explains why the Flood account has become an integral part of so many diverse cultures around the world. Apparently, the Black Sea survivors who chose to live in total isolation *before* the event were suddenly migrating all over the planet *after* the event...hmmm. Metaphorically speaking, this may quack like a duck, but it certainly does not appear to resemble anything like a duck!

Let us take a moment and examine this from strictly logical points of view. First, if we assume this preeminent disaster was undiscovered by the local residents, then the suddenness of the bursting land bridge would have left no time for the construction of an Ark. It also does not allow sufficient time for the collection of animals, thus contradicting *their* own recorded folklore! This theory also fails to take into consideration the Biblical story or the Gilgamesh tale, two other important historical records of a universal flood event which cannot be ignored.

Second, if the ship builders *did* have sufficient warning due to the discovery of this imminent danger, then why did they simply not evaluate the extent of the possible damage and safely evacuate the area, thereby bypassing the utter futility of building a gigantic ship? In truth, people don't always correctly interpret the sometimes obvious signs of an impending disaster; case in point, the Johnstown Flood of 1889, but then in those cases, if the local populous chose to ignore such warnings, that fact would have been so reiterated and studiously documented in their subsequent fireside chats. In the case of the Johnstown Flood, it was well known and subsequently recorded that danger lurked within the faulty engineering of the dirt-terminus dam, but most chose to ignore those warnings because of the many false alarms issued by local authorities

who supposedly understood the likelihood of the impending calamity but obviously didn't.<sup>7</sup>

Last but not least, if we again assume the villagers had adequate warning, then what would be the urgency for building a 450-foot ship to save hordes of animals which could simply migrate to higher ground away from the localized flood area? Who has not heard fascinating stories about the high levels of extra sensory perception which animals seem to possess? This barely understood, yet fascinating phenomenon would have undeniably given most creatures' ample warning time to flee away from any impending disaster area. In this case, the animals would have displayed far more intelligence than the local residents because animals certainly would not migrate toward a bunch of noisy boat builders when the allure of escaping to a nearby mountain would logically suffice.

Collectively or individually taken as a whole, these localized flood theories insult early civilizations who obviously commanded a sophisticated level of appreciation for the natural laws which ruled their environment. Archaeology substantiates this fact through oopart discoveries alone! Then again, why is it so hard to accept the most obvious conclusion that what happened in areas such as the Black Sea might simply be an integrated part of a truly global catastrophe which submerged all land masses? It is a well known geological fact that planet Earth was once a water world before the continents eventually began to appear. If the Earth was covered in water once, is it not conceivable that it could happen again? Especially when we consider the fact that it was the same Creator controlling both instances!

Most importantly, how does one explain the numerous signs of drastic upheaval and sudden death which has left its mark on a global scale, regardless of whether it was discovered on a mountain top or in a deep sea depression? There are some who will claim that these scars are the result of plate tectonic shifts alone, however this dynamic movement would not obliterate all signs of a global flood because its occurrence can be recognized as one event locked within a series of global catastrophes recorded and preserved in the layered sands of time. All evidence points to the more logical conclusion that God's primary objective in precipitating the Flood was to destroy *all* life on the planet. It would be senseless for Him

to orchestrate events which would simply concentrate on creatures in a single localized area.

There is another self-evident truth which is often overlooked when contemplating the subject of destruction by flood waters, thus it demands careful scrutiny and must be addressed if it is our stated intent to remain compatible with the methodologies of scientific analysis. This often-ignored challenge finds its roots in two simple questions:

1. Where did enough water come from to cover the whole Earth?
2. Where did the water return to in order for dry land to reappear?

“Meteorology 101” informs us that the rains we experience today are the result of a cycle which starts with warm temperatures prompting moisture evaporation from large bodies of water. This moisture rises up within the atmosphere until it cools and condenses into raindrops which then fall back to Earth as a liquid ready to repeat the cycle. Since it is a fact that water cycles between vapor and liquid (or ice) then liquid to vapor, we must conclude the total volume of water can neither increase nor decrease; it must remain constant, otherwise this meteorological cycle would become unbalanced and eventually collapse.<sup>8</sup>

As an example, if one were to submerge a dry sponge into a glass of water, the sponge will absorb a portion of the total volume of water contained in the glass. If the sponge is then removed, the water level will fall, but once all the collected water retained in the sponge is squeezed back into the glass, the water returns to its former level. The reverse corollary to this example would be if a saturated sponge were to be squeezed over a completely full glass of water it would cause the additional water to pour over the top of the glass, which unbalances the cycle between the glass and sponge. Of course, our example does not preclude the fact that catastrophic flooding does occur in localized areas where inordinate amounts of moisture are suddenly disgorged in the form of rain.

The principle physics are elementary; rain alone could not possibly account for enough water in Noah’s world to submerge *all* land masses because it would first have had to cycle from surface water, and/or melted ice. The presence of this water obviously did not cover the entire surface

of the planet in the first place so there had to be an additional source. More importantly, the extra water needed to submerge the entire Earth must somehow be accounted for, as well as its redistribution, otherwise land would have never again appeared.

The inescapable conclusion for us to realize is that the total volume of water contained on our planet can neither increase nor decrease; it must remain constant. This means whatever calamity we explore must also remain consistent with the natural laws of water distribution. It is important for us to remember God is the creator of order; He does not need magic wands because He would have begun His creative process by first establishing order out of chaos with natural laws which will consistently and logically work for His intended interests.

What we are looking for is a combination of natural events which will first drastically alter land masses without massive volcanization and second provide enough water from already existing sources to essentially wipe out all creatures while completely submerging all land masses underwater for a period of several months. In keeping with this, we also have to identify where the Flood waters returned to and what natural cycles were altered to precipitate the resulting meteorological changes mentioned in the Bible.

Now that we are armed with an understanding of how the individual parts of this catastrophe need to work, we can systematically explore possibilities which will better satisfy *all* the requirements for a proper flood. With respect to the preponderance of physical evidence currently in existence today, this disaster *has* to end up being the completely-encompassing, Earth-altering, grand-daddy of all recorded catastrophic events!

It is possible the Antediluvians were startled to see rain clouds for the first time after the doors of the Ark had been closed. Genesis 2:5-6 specifically tells us that before the Flood, God did not water the Earth with rain but instead sent moisture up through the ground in the form of vapor mists during the night. Because of this it is reasonable to conclude that rain clouds were not present, since there was obviously a meteorological cycle which sustained life without their presence. This fact is further endorsed when God established a covenant with mankind that

He would never again destroy humans by a flood. The specific sign for this covenant was the “creation” of the rainbow, Genesis 9:13. Since the principle ingredient of a rainbow is suspended water particles, it would be logical that this would be a spectacular and never-before-seen sight to the survivors of the Flood. More importantly, this means that something drastic had to change in order to jump start an entirely new and different cycle of moisture which necessitated the presence of clouds.

Many of us have a clear understanding of a ground-vapor-type watering cycle because we have seen or possibly purchased novelty store terrarium systems composed of soil, plants, and water which are completely sealed within a glass sphere. When placed properly in spaces containing temperature variances, water will rise up out of the soil during warm cycles, then fall back over the plants and thus return to the soil during cool cycles. The entertaining result is that the plants will survive for years though separated from the outside world. This happens because the moisture cycle sealed within the glass sphere is sufficient to sustain and nourish the flora which is also locked within its glass enclosed boundaries. Scientifically speaking the atmospheric layering of the troposphere and stratosphere would be capable of providing climatical stability in a similar fashion to the glass terrarium. It also means this represents “ground zero” where changes must occur in order to destabilize the Antediluvian meteorological cycle.

There is a controversial theory that presumes the presence of a protective vapor envelope; however this is highly unlikely since such a solid water barrier would produce temperatures in excess of 200 degrees and produce crushing pressures that most animal life could not sustain.<sup>9</sup> Even if we were to accept that Antediluvian weather was controlled by the presence of a protective water shield, we still need to understand where all the “new” water would have come from. By this, we mean, from what other storage sources must water have come from in order to submerge the highest mountain peaks by at least 20 feet, as recorded in Genesis 7:20.

According to the United States Geological Survey (USGS), our total present-day water supply on Earth is approximately 332 million cubic miles, of which 97 percent is in the form of saline oceans. The other 3 percent or 9.7 million cubic miles is fresh water divided amongst icebergs,



glaciers, swamps, lakes, rivers, and underground aquifers.<sup>10</sup> As we have already established, the Earth is a closed system which operates on a recycling basis similar to our example of the glass-enclosed terrarium. With respect to today's meteorological cycle, this means the total volume of water on Earth constantly cycles between water vapor to liquid water and then back to vapor again. It is also a given that any particular point identified in this cycle will determine how the water is stored within the confines of our planetary atmosphere. In the gaseous state, the vaporized water floats in the air; in its liquid state, it falls as rain or snow where it is stored on the surface or collected underground until it cycles back into a gaseous state.

Regardless of what meteorological cycle happens to be present, the inescapable conclusion we must therefore accept is the total volume of water which existed on Earth during its creation is still here: no more, no less! Herein lays the dilemma which must be addressed before we can continue with the probable method of destruction by water. Where did all this "extra" water come from and where did it return to?

If there is today and always has been approximately 332 million cubic miles of water, of which 97 percent is in the form of oceans, it means by melting all the ice and surfacing all the underground water we should be able to add approximately 9.8 million cubic miles of additional water to raise the water line above existing sea levels. If we divide 9,800,000 by 5,280 (number of feet in a mile), we arrive at a figure of 1,852 linear feet of additional water. While this depth would certainly cover much of our present-day land masses, it would hardly submerge our highest peak, which is Mt. Everest at 29,028 feet above sea level. To completely cover Everest would require an additional 31 million cubic miles of water, which would raise the depth to approximately 5 miles above sea level. To submerge Mt. Ararat, at 16,946 feet, would require a water depth of about 3.2 miles above sea level or 19 million cubic miles of additional water.

Incidentally, if we accept, as some apologists propose, that the extra water could have come from an ice comet, then we must address where all this "new" water went after the Flood waters subsided. It cannot just evaporate and it did not simply float back into space! Remember, if we

add water to the already balanced equation, we have to explain where it returns to in order to keep the scales in balance. To put it another way, the laws of physics dictate that this simply will not compute unless we, at all times, maintain an absolute balance to our fluid equation.

A very important clue is revealed in Genesis 7:11, which not only helps us identify the probable source of this catastrophe but also provides us with a sequential order of events which keeps the fluid equation in balance, while helping us to identify the root causes of this diluvian disaster. The verse reads, “*The underground waters burst forth on the earth **and then** the rain fell in mighty torrents from the sky.*”

In 1976, Egyptologist Albert Slosman deciphered the hieroglyphs recorded in *The Book of the Dead* and discovered some very strange and frightening references to a global cataclysm of epic proportions. The writings included detailed descriptions by multiple witnesses of an eerie continuous light surrounding the Earth, masses of falling stars, mega earthquakes which were the result of colliding land masses punching upwards or dropping out of sight, multiple volcanic eruptions, huge forest fires, and gigantic tidal waves which circled the Earth.<sup>11</sup> Incredibly, it was later discovered that many of these apocalyptic descriptions deciphered from the Egyptian holy texts were similarly repeated on pictorial reliefs located in Mayan ruins uncovered at non-related South American excavations.

Professor Charles Hapgood published a book in 1999 which offers a viable explanation to the mysteries surrounding Slosman’s curious ciphers. In his book, *The Path of the Pole*, he documents the science as well as reoccurrence probabilities associated with magnetic pole shifts or reversals initiated by our sun. Periodically, solar outbursts, caused by the collision of hotter and cooler areas on the sun, liberate enormous bursts of electromagnetic energy which rocket towards Earth and drastically alter the magnetic fields which surround and protect our planet. Normally electromagnetic disruptions cause dramatic changes to meteorological systems and weather patterns, but when the solar energy burst is powerful enough, it will also affect Earth’s rotational speed by shifting its axis or, reversing magnetic polarity.

Major axis and polarity shifts accelerate the dynamic processes associated with tectonic drift, causing massive shifts and upheavals to Earth’s

continental plates. The resulting damage is quantified by the magnitude of the axis shift and the suddenness of the resulting tectonic drift. Hapgood goes on to prove that there have been several polar shifts, some severe and some not, in Earth's history, and that they happen with surprising regularity. Based on cyclical data histories, the professor suspects the world is due for another polar shift within the next few years. Decidedly, we can do nothing to stop such events, but Hapgood claims it is possible to loosely predict the next occurrence by observing and recording changes in sun spots.<sup>12</sup>

A global catastrophe caused by accelerated tectonic movement would result in continental land masses, traveling a little over 1,000 mph (Earth's' approximate rotational speed), to literally tear themselves from their sub mantel core layers, and thus become free-floating. These free-floating plates would begin to separate and hurl forward until they crashed into slower-moving plates. The titanic forces unleashed by the collision of continental plates would cause some land masses to begin disappearing beneath others (called subduction), thus forcing the emergence of massive mountain ranges, while simultaneously releasing unprecedented volcanic activity, raging fires, and enormous tidal waves in every direction.

We can witness the inexorable results of tectonic plate movement today when we observe the exposed sharp granite peaks of the Rocky Mountain range which occurred when the Pacific plate subducted beneath the North American plate, along the coast of California. This caused submerged rock formations along the interior plate areas to thrust themselves high into the air. Another dramatic example also caused by plate subduction is Arizona's Grand Canyon, which was created because of sudden interior mantel uplift forces. This instantaneous upward thrust occurred deep beneath the North American plate, causing a massive water reservoir, located east of the present day Colorado River, to suddenly empty its contents within a very short span of time. At first the force of the cascading river cut with surgical precision and quickly gouged a wide canyon through the top layers of soil. As the reservoir continued to drain, it lost some of its gravitational force, thus carving out a progressively narrower canyon wall as it cut downwards and deeper, to an average present day depth of one mile.

Today geologists are able to offer conclusive proof indicating our individual continents actually originated from a single land mass (Pangaea)

which was subsequently divided into multiple continental plates as a result of massive meteor impacts and polar shifts. These milestone events alternately accelerated or retarded the tectonic processes of continental separation within relatively short periods of time. From an astronaut's view of the planet, it is easy to identify separated continents which were once joined together as part of a single land mass. Geologists have proved this conclusively along the eastern side of South America and the western side of Africa by discovering interrupted substrates and rock formations which match perfectly, yet are separated by thousands of miles of ocean.<sup>13</sup>

Disappearing plate edges would create pressure changes in the subterranean layers, thus releasing a chain of volcanic activity, but more importantly, it would also compromise underground aquifers. The sudden temperature changes between subterranean mixtures of water and lava would create tremendous pressures that would blow through to the surface. This, in turn, emptied the aquifer which was then refilled with molten lava. The water immediately checks uncontrolled vulcanization, but in the process, also produces the destructive geysers of steam which are consequently hurled thousands of feet into the air, picking up huge quantities of surface debris along the way.

As we can now visualize, this catastrophic event serves to better align us with the Biblical reference to *"underground waters bursting forth."* More importantly, herein resides the possible solution as to where enough water must have come from to completely flood the planet while at the same time altering the Antediluvian meteorological watering cycle from underground to above ground.

While it is true that 97 percent of the water in today's world is represented by oceans, it is also reasonable and highly probable to suspect that in Noah's world this percentage might have been radically different. For example, what if the land masses in Antediluvian times were much closer to sea level and spread over a larger portion of the Earth's surface. This would result in smaller and perhaps even shallower seas, but it would also mean a larger percentage of the total water volume would have to be stored underground in aquifers which were much larger than what we know of today. It also means these underground storage basins would pose a greater threat if they were violently disrupted and forced to release their contents.

It should be noted that the above posit does not adequately address the “extra” water which could have been dumped from an atmospheric vapor envelope. This envelope would have obviously collapsed because of dramatic gravitational changes resulting from the severe polar shift. We do not know how much additional water would have been contained in such a protective envelope or whether the envelope even existed before the Flood event. If it was there and did dissipate itself, this additional moisture would simply be added as part of the overall water equation, since our total planetary volume of water calculation must always remain consistent.

Expanded underground water storage provides a plausible explanation which not only satisfies scriptural references to pre-flood underground based watering cycles but also provides a logical solution as to where the necessary additional water came from in order to completely flood the planet. In simple terms, it explains the presence of more surface water, now displaced by collapsed or lava-filled subterranean reservoirs, which resulted in larger deeper seas while at the same time drastically reducing the capacity for underground water storage. This would not affect the total volume of water, which must remain constant, but would redefine *where* it was stored in the New World which presented itself after the Flood.

One shudders to think what it must have been like to experience such a catastrophic event! Victims would feel their knees buckle under them as they fell to the ground, or would flail their arms wildly when they flew into the air due to lurching land masses and dramatic centrifugal changes in gravity rippling through the ground. Breath would literally be ripped from a victim’s lungs because of the sudden gravitational pressure changes which also serve to toss them about like rag dolls as they lose all sense of balance. We can visualize the pitiful wide-eyed desperation of men, women, and children as they futilely attempt to grasp for any solid object which would momentarily stabilize their wildly rocking and pitching world. As desperate survivors looked to the heavens, they would suddenly witness day turning into night while countless stars in the night sky unexpectedly began to plummet towards the horizon in a massive shower of streaking light. Of course, these victims would not realize this, but the star shower and dramatic nightfall effects would be caused by the Earth’s axis tilting a few degrees to one side within moments.

## NIGHTFALL

As undulating land masses and steam geysers throw dust and dirt into the sky, it would be remembered by any remaining survivors, as an eerie reddish glow which distorts the sky's customary blue brilliance. Many victims would experience the visual horror of massive tidal waves pushing an indescribable wall of debris which threatens to instantaneously crush them when it reaches their position. Still other survivors might briefly witness massive volumes of pressurized scalding water belching out of the ground and shooting high into the murky red sky – all the while ripping, tearing, and scattering lifeless bodies and body parts like autumn leaves trapped in a violent tornado. This starts to sound more like the accounts so meticulously documented in Slosman's *Book of the Dead* translation, does it not?

A severe polar shift by itself would generate enough of a threat to all life on Earth. A 4-degree shift of the axis and the resulting wobbly orbit would not only collapse the protective thin vapor envelope, but would also expose the atmosphere of Noah's world to a whole new set of meteorologic variables. Drastic changes in temperature would produce super windstorms while the spouting geysers, scattering their liquid contents into the air, would cause water molecules to start collecting around particles of dust and airborne debris. These water drops would become heavier than air, thus overcoming gravitational suspension, and fall back to the Earth as torrents of rain. We are now in complete harmony with the Biblical account of the Flood event which first identified shooting geysers of water followed afterwards by severe rainstorms.

*Voilà!* We have a plausible explanation which not only satisfies the Biblical record but provides a logical scenario that agrees with geology, meteorology, and the laws of physics. We are also left with a daunting example of the destructive forces God could allow to be unleashed on the world. This sudden release of energy would not be characterized as a simple earthquake or heavy rain but would be more equivalent to the forces created by a planetary-level disruption. Such a disruption would reshape the entire surface of the planet, thus resulting in several small fractured continents divided by high mountain ranges and large contiguous bodies of water. No city wall or manmade structure could protect against such natural forces.

Not even fish could escape these titanic forces. Rene Noorbergen writes in his book, *Secrets of the Lost Races*, "...countless numbers of sea creatures, together with other delicate fossils without a sign of disintegration, are among the startling features that strongly suggest they were laid down not in a slow and gentle manner but rather abruptly and suddenly, as if by a great and terrible catastrophe."<sup>14</sup>

Noted ichthyologists and scientists agree that when a fish dies its body first floats to the surface and then sinks to the bottom as built up internal gases dissipate. During this cycle, the carcass is usually devoured within a matter of hours by scavenger fish. The fossil fish found in sedimentary rock are very often preserved with all their skin and bones intact. Entire shoals of fish over large areas, numbering in the billions of specimens, are found in a state of agony but without the accompanying marks of a scavenger attack.

Geologist Hugh Miller, writing about the Devonian rocks which cover most of the British Isles, commented that "at this period in our history (referring to a particular layer of rock), some terrible catastrophe resulted in the sudden destruction of all fish in an area at least a hundred miles from boundary to boundary, perhaps much more." The same platform in Orkney as at Cromarty was found to be thick with remains which exhibit unequivocally the marks of violent death. The victims were contorted, contracted and curved. The tails of individual fish were found, in many instances, to be bent around the head with spines sticking out and fins spread to the full, as fish appear when they die in convulsions. The area described by Miller covers at least 10,000 square miles and shows all the evidence of having been exposed to a major destructive force.<sup>15</sup>

Describing a spot closer to home, Harry S. Ladd of the United States Geological Survey notes, "More than a billion fish, averaging six to eight inches in length, died on four square miles of bay bottom which is now located in a Southern California desert".<sup>16</sup>

# NIGHTFALL



## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

- <sup>1</sup> d'Alessio, S. (1989). "The nuclear and aerial dynamics of the Tunguska Event". *Planetary and Space Science* **37** (3): 329–340. Bibcode:1989P&SS...37..329D. doi:10.1016/0032-0633(89)90030-5.
- <sup>2</sup> Oldroyd, David Roger, ed. *The Earth Inside and Out: Some Major Contributions to Geology in the Twentieth Century*. Geological Society. pp. 28–32. 2002.  
  
McCall, G.J.H.; Bowden, A.J.; Howarth, R.J., eds. *The History of Meteoritics and Key Meteorite Collections*. Geological Society. p. 61. 2006.
- <sup>3</sup> Bowden, A.J.; Howarth, R.J., eds. *Sudbury. Earth Impact Database*. University of New Brunswick. Retrieved 2008-12-30. McCall, G.J.H.; *The History of Meteoritics and Key Meteorite Collections*. Geological Society. p. 61. 2006.  
  
Riller, U. *Structural characteristics of the Sudbury impact structure, Canada: Impact-induced versus orogenic deformation - A review*. *Meteoritics and Planetary Science*, 40, 11, 1723-1740. 2005.
- <sup>4</sup> Frankel, Charles. *The End of the Dinosaurs: Chicxulub Crater and Mass Extinctions*. Cambridge University Press. 1999.  
  
Grieve, R. *Petrology and Chemistry of the Impact Melt at Mistastin Lake Crater*. *Geological Society of America Bulletin* (12): 1617–1629. 1975.
- <sup>5</sup> Sitchin, Zachariah. *Divine Encounters*, Publisher: HarperCollins Publishers, January, 1996.
- <sup>6</sup> Wilford, John Noble. *Black Sea Deluge Hypothesis. Geologists Link Black Sea Deluge To Farming's Rise*. The New York Times. December 17, 1996.
- <sup>7</sup> McCullough, David. *The Johnstown Flood*. 1968.
- <sup>8</sup> Bluestein, H., *Synoptic-Dynamic Meteorology in Midlatitudes: Principles of Kinematics and Dynamics, Vol. 1*, Oxford University Press, 1992.  
  
Global Modelling, US Naval Research Laboratory, Monterey, Ca
- <sup>9</sup> *The Water Vapor Canopy Theory, Why the Bible (and Science) Says It Is False*: <http://godandscience.org/youngearth/canopy.html>
- <sup>10</sup> *How Much Water is on, in, and above the Earth*: <http://water.usgs.gov/edu/earthhowmuch.html>
- <sup>11</sup> Slosman, Albert; Laffont, Robert. *The Grand Cataclysm*. French, December 1976  
  
Slosman, Albert. *The Egyptian Portal: (les Portes de l'étrange)* French addition, 1983.
- <sup>12</sup> Hapgood, Charles. *The Path to the Poles*: Adventures Unlimited Press; New Ed edition. July 1, 1999.
- <sup>13</sup> Kious, W.J.; Tilling, R.I. *Continental Drift: , Historical perspective, This Dynamic Earth: the Story of Plate Tectonics* (Online ed.), U.S. Geological Survey, Retrieved 2008-01-

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

29. 1996, February 2001.

USGS: *Historical Perspective on Plate Tectonics*, last updated 19 September 2011.

Spooner, Alicia M. *Geology for Dummies*. July 26, 2011.

<sup>14</sup> Noorbergen, Rene. *Secrets of the Lost Races*. Bk. 2. Norcom edition. 1993. *Treasures of the Lost Races* Bk. 3. 1977.

<sup>15</sup> Miller, *Testimony of the Rocks*, Lecture Five

Miller, Hugh. *Sketches of His Life and Writings. The Foot-prints of the Creator: Or, The Asterolepis of Stromness*. Harvard University, Department Of Geological Sciences. 1851.

<sup>16</sup> Ladd, Harry Stephen. *Harry S. Ladd Papers*, circa 1915-1982 and undated. 1899.

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN



## ARKAEOLOGY



In Noah's time, the survival of the fittest was the rule of the day, thus making life perilous for anyone marching to the beat of a different drum. Through previously recorded documentation, we have witnessed a similar parallel to this kind of existence during the Dark Ages when Europe was immersed in constant bloodshed by powerful organized gangs of mail-clad knights who roamed the countryside murdering, raping, and pillaging in the name of their feudal lord.

Noah and his determination to build a ship in the middle of his own backyard would have been small potatoes to the objective of gaining control and access to the fruit of eternal life. At the same time, the rather large drain of local manpower needed to assist with the construction of Noah's "ridiculous folly" would most certainly have been the talk of the town, as well as attracting the attention of the local ruling class. It is therefore reasonable to conclude that Noah was extremely wealthy, and thus, financially independent. It would be impossible for him to back an enterprise such as this without the funds needed to acquire sufficient quantities of labor and material. Of course his wealth and influence would also place Noah in a precarious and exposed position, so a sure bet for his survival would be to circulate as one of the crowd, while dismissing his ship building hobby, by appearing unapproachable or somewhat eccentric and fanatical – as a person whose cheese might have slipped off his cracker.

In this manner, Noah could proceed with his daunting task by maintaining a detached interest in current events while continuously acquiring materials and recruiting fringe individuals, who were down and out on their luck, providing them with "three hots and a cot" in exchange for their labor skills. The fact that Noah needed to maintain an ongoing presence with the party crowd is a foregone conclusion and was probably easier

than thought, since we know Noah loved his liquor and on more than one occasion managed to turn himself into a senseless drunk. He was decidedly not the pious or stoic, white bearded figure, most commonly pictured in the typical Bible class or Flood movie. He was most likely domineering, aggressive, argumentative, calculating, and fast on his feet. At the same time, Noah must have possessed a magnetic personality, as well as being an informed conversationalist who was both popular and charismatic. These skills would have been necessary in order to deal with the countless personalities presented by the massive labor force; not to mention the reoccurring challenges, presented by the alien sons of God, and their presumably troublesome and egocentric hybrid offspring. Noah would have also possessed excellent managerial, and resource acquisition skills because the task of constructing the Ark would have required these absolutely essential talents in order to complete the project.

It goes without saying; the redeeming characteristic which served Noah best was his self-proclaimed allegiance to the Lord, just as his father, Lamech, had taught him since early childhood. In short, Noah never questioned the fact that the Lord was his Creator and thus, most importantly, understood the necessity of keeping his bloodline pure from alien contamination, Genesis 6:1-5. This is interesting; if Noah knew the importance of remaining undefiled by the aliens, then he must have had at least a partial understanding of their strategic objective to destroy the human seed!

Noah and his family of seven harbored a deep secret, and it must have been a source of tremendous stress and worry. It seems they were the *only* pure Homo sapiens left, and they were surrounded by aliens, hybrids, or otherwise tainted humans who had already made their choice, Genesis 6:2-3. Fortunately, Noah must not have been a talker when he was out drinking with the boys, for there is no doubt the local hybrid governor, along with his alien superior, would actively seek to defile or destroy this only remaining human bloodline if the secret were to be discovered.

Since census or family ancestral records would logically have been the tracking methods deployed by the hybrids to expose allegiances and target bloodlines, it meant Noah would have probably skirted the issue with forgeries and under-the-table bribes. Translated, Noah also had to be deceptive and he would occasionally need to call upon the Lord to intervene

on his behalf. Noah maintained a close and trusted relationship with the Lord, and was so committed to his choice to remain undefiled that he was even building a giant boat millions of cubits away from a body of water large enough to float it! As to the construction of the Ark, it appears that Noah was the Chief Engineer, but the Lord was the Chief Naval Architect who not only entrusted the building of His ship to Noah, but apparently stepped in with sometimes strange and unexplainable technologies in order to insure the protection of its most valuable cargo.

The fact that the Lord “found favor” with Noah shows the tremendous respect the Lord had for our Antediluvian hero (Genesis 6:8). One can imagine the private discussions which must have occurred between Noah and the Lord during the quiet hours. On the one hand, we have Noah, fascinated by all the complex engineering and technological gadgets going into the Ark. For sure he would have sounded like a kid with non-stop questions as to what *that* did and how *this* worked. On the other hand, we can visualize a sometimes reflective and justifiably frustrated Lord who was constantly being burnt in effigy by the very humans He once created and who were now contaminated creatures, lost forever by their own choice. We can also visualize the likelihood of several intriguing discussions about what the storm might be like and how Noah and his family were going to survive once the Flood waters dissipated.

There are countless engineering challenges which need to be considered in the building of the Ark, so perhaps a good place to start would be to understand more about the building materials used. It is probable Noah would have been taken into the Lord’s confidence and informed that the only possible way to survive a global flood would be if he could house himself and his family in a sturdy ship which would be under the Lord’s protection, thus avoiding obliteration by geyser and lava eruptions or hurtling chunks of dirt and rock. This could be no crudely built ship. It might have to withstand possible collisions with rock outcroppings as well as survive violent wave action which could drive the ship partially underwater, thus exposing the hull to thousands of pounds of water pressure which would consequently threaten to implode the ship.

Genesis 6:14 clearly indicates that the principle components to be used in the construction of the Ark should be gopher wood and bitumen. Most Biblical translations use the term *gopher* when describing the type

of wood, but actually the Hebrew translation for the word *gopher* is unknown. Popular translations, such as the King James Version, added the word *wood* in response to the obvious assumption that gopher was a type of wood.

There have been many ideas put forward about the existence of gopher wood, but the most common belief is that it was a type of cypress tree. This idea was first postulated by Adam Clarke, a Methodist theologian famous for his commentary on the Bible. He cited the Greek word for cypress, *kuparisson*, and the resemblance of the Hebrew root word, *kupar*, to the unknown word *gopher* would be the most logical consideration as to identifying the type of wood used in the construction of the Ark. Some dictionaries mention gopher wood as a deciduous tree with white flowers, specifically American yellowwood.

It has also been posited that gopher might not be a type of wood at all but rather a type of reed, thus forwarding the basis of argument that the construction of ancient reed boats pre-dated wooden boat construction... hmmm, that may be so but who ever heard of a 450-foot reed boat?<sup>1</sup> There are a number of Biblical scholars suggesting the word *gopher* may have referred to a process performed on the wood such as lamination. This is notably an important consideration when pondering the physical size of the Ark.

Actually, the most logical conclusion is that an obscure and much over-worked scribe stayed up way past his bedtime and made a simple typographical error by transcribing the letter “g” instead of “k”, thereby setting the stage for millennia of confusion and debate. You see, unlike the unknown translation for the word *gopher*, *kopher* is in fact a Hebrew word and the translation for this word means *pitch*.<sup>2</sup> This being the case, the use of the word *kopher*, applied in conjunction with the word *wood*, would simply translate to mean *pitched wood*, which makes perfect sense! For those who would claim that this invalidates the inspirational basis of the scriptures, it clearly does not; it just means the various translators, from one language to another, were simply human.

The other important ingredient specifically mentioned in Genesis is bitumen, which is of course commonly called tar, a product we are all quite

familiar with in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century. Tar is a viscous and sticky derivative of petroleum, which was used for hundreds of years to waterproof the wooden hulls as well as the standing rigging on wind powered ships. This also seems to make perfect sense that it should have been used to waterproof the Ark...uh-oh, but wait a minute...doesn't this mean we have a potentially unpleasant dilemma here?

As far back as we can remember, we have been taught that it was some type of global killer which actually produced all the dead animals and plant life contributing to today's coal and oil reserves. However, if this is the case, then what was the source of the tar used by Noah or for that matter any other Antediluvian? Most of us are familiar with the fact that coal and oil is derived from the decay of organic materials, such as vegetation and animal remains, which have been locked below the surface, under pressure, in an oxygen-deprived environment. Also of paramount consideration is the fact that a sufficient element of time must pass before this pressurized "cooking" process will produce the finished product.<sup>3</sup>

If Noah used tar, then the challenge for Creationists is to fit the destruction of prehistoric creatures along with their habitat within the brief timeline between the creation of the planet and the onset of the Biblical Flood. This is a difficult task which becomes even more impossible when we have failed to address the initial creation of these prehistoric animals or the enormous spans of time it obviously takes to turn them into a raw resource such as coal or petroleum...“Houston, we have a problem!”

We only have two possible choices to consider; first, the oil was already there and Antediluvians possessed the necessary technology to locate and extract it. Second, the technology in Noah's time was sufficient to produce a synthetic derivative which resembled the properties of tar. We have already established the fact that Antediluvians most likely had the capability to both manufacture synthetic materials as well as produce petroleum extraction equipment. It is also logical to conclude that if synthetic tar was being created, Antediluvians would have begun the creative process using natural substances first in order to verify that the properties of the synthetic product closely matched those of the targeted natural resource they were attempting to duplicate.



There is a naturally inherent process in man's sentient reasoning capabilities which seldom changes, regardless of historical timelines. Humans did not invent the wheel until after the fulcrum was invented, and neither the incremental development nor engineering logic behind the operation of the wheel was important until it became necessary to move objects heavier than brute force would otherwise allow. The same logic processes would be consistent with regard to Antediluvian laboratory experimentation for the development of synthetic substances. For purposes of consistency, natural tar would have been needed as a laboratory control substance in the development of synthetic tar, which means we are still forced to conclude the root substance would have already been present! This brings us back to the original question; how can we as Creationists explain how it got there?

It should be noted that there is controversy as to whether oil is/was derived from primordial matter (abiogenic) and therefore not from living matter (biogenic). This has spurred research into the possibility that oil existed in the pristine state before the Flood and was forced, as a result of the Flood, into underground reservoirs where we find it today. This is sometimes referred to as the theobaric model (made by God), since it challenges the traditional "cooking" method which is generally accepted by geologists today.<sup>4</sup> The theory is interesting, but still in its infancy because it has not adequately addressed many questions about the creative processes for other secondary spin-off resources such as coal or natural gas; therefore, it would be premature to seriously consider it as a viable option at this time.

At this point, it seems like a good time to come to grips with the inevitable question regarding the subject of dinosaurs. Did God create these animals and, if so, what was the purpose of such a creation? Were they perfect creations which were suddenly transformed into monsters as a result of sin? This is a perfectly legitimate question because the Bible tells us this is precisely what happened to the serpent once Lucifer joined with it and God subsequently cursed it. So, if this is the case, how does one fit dinosaurs into the Edenic creation and fall of man timeline?

It is open to speculation as to how many animals were physically present in the Ark, but it is a foregone conclusion that dinosaurs were not among

those brought aboard, or we would still have them roaming the Earth today. With due respect to this controversial subject, the root challenge which puts Creationists and secular scientists at odds is not *if* dinosaurs were created but *when* they were created? Any Christian worth his salt can recite the Genesis story from memory because it was drummed into him since early childhood. It goes like this: God created the Earth in six days and rested on the seventh. Thus, according to our understanding of the Genesis story, the Earth is approximately 6,000 years old, because that figure was derived from Hebrew genealogies that are also noted in the Bible. Our challenge is that the life and death span of dinosaurs would obviously have to somehow fit within this creative timeframe, yet there is little mention in the Bible of such unique creatures ever being created.

The one exception which is often cited is the mystical creature referred to in the Old Testament as the Leviathan. There are actually several offhand references to this creature by numerous Biblical authors, but it is in the book of Job that we are treated with a detailed description of this fascinating beast. After Job confronts God by asking why he has been made to suffer, God answers Job with a lengthy series of questions which begin in chapter 38 and end in chapter 41. It is during God's counter-challenge in chapter 41 that we learn the Leviathan had an enormous frame, tremendous strength – especially in its neck, a double layer of scales, and a mouth full of terrifying teeth. We are also informed that its eyes had a reddish glow and that a mixture of fire, sparks, and hot breath leapt from its nose and mouth when it sneezed. What is especially ominous is God pretty much considered this creature to be the “king of beasts”, and there seems to be no dispute to that claim by any humans who managed to come in direct contact with it.

What is not apparent in the Job description, but is obvious in other Biblical passages, is the fact that the Leviathan was a creature that apparently lived in the sea and thus it was ancient sailors who invariably recorded details of encounters with it. The fact that it was a seagoing creature has led many to believe the Leviathan might have been a Liopleurodon, or at least a close relationship to it. The Liopleurodon existed during the Cretaceous era, was a mammal ranging in size from 30 to 60 feet in length, and sported very long powerful jaws lined with teeth twice the size of Tyrannosaurus Rex. Another interesting possibility, which is recorded in

the New Living Translation Bible, published by Tyndale House, interprets the Leviathan as a crocodile. Though it seems a bit of a stretch to associate the crocodile with the word “enormous” as it is specifically referred to in Job, there is little doubt that, pound-for-pound, the crocodile certainly has a well deserved reputation for viciousness in certain circumstances, especially if the victim found himself in the water with it when it was hungry.

In either of the above cases, there is little difficulty providing a reasonable explanation for the glowing red eyes, since most of us have duplicated this phenomenon with the flash apparatus from our picture camera. The resultant “red eye” effect is nothing more than light which is being reflected off the back of the subject’s retina. On the other hand, what is particularly disturbing in the case of both candidates is the ability to provide a rational explanation for the beast’s ability to “sneeze” sparks, fire, and smoke through its mouth and nostrils. To this author’s knowledge, there have been no recorded encounters with crocodiles blowing fire from their mouths, and, though we know little about the Leviathan or its real-life counterpart, it is difficult to envision a sea-going creature capable of duplicating such a feat. The fire-breathing ability, coupled with the description of its scales and enormous size, makes the Leviathan sound more like the mythical dragons described in European folklore and fairy tales.

There is one other curiosity that needs to be addressed with regard to Biblical dinosaur references and that is the fact that the Leviathan seems to be the only example provided by the Bible of anything resembling a real-life dinosaur. It stands to reason that if one type of dinosaur existed, then others must have also been present because we have discovered a large variety of prehistoric skeletons all over the planet to substantiate that supposition. Yet, in spite of this fact, there are no other Biblical references relating to the existence of reptiles such as the Tyrannosaurus Rex (T-Rex) or Velociraptor, just two of many examples which also existed during the Cretaceous era, had ferocious reputations, yet were land-based instead of sea-going creatures. Many of us would not dispute the fact that the T-Rex most certainly would have been considered the “king of beasts” had it been present in ancient societies. Its enormous size and body composition made it a perfect killing machine, and there is little

doubt it was at the top of the food chain when it existed. It should also be noted that while Velociraptors may have only been six to eight feet in stature, it is a sure bet that the Bible, as well as multiple secular sources, would have recounted many stories about their ability to successfully hunt prey using the intelligent and highly-coordinated pack techniques which have been attributed to them.

The author of the book of Job is unknown, and it is presumed Job lived around 1,600 to 1,800 BC, so this poses an interesting question: is it possible God was merely reciting details of a legend which was already prevalent throughout the folklore of ancient mankind? As an example, how many of us have actually seen a Sasquatch or the Abominable Snowman, yet most of us have heard about these legendary creatures and there seems to be a consistent pattern of new sightings and supporting discoveries to perpetuate the ongoing legend of their *probable* existence. This author does not intend to try second-guessing God or to even suggest a probable rational for His particular choice of words in the case of the Job story. The Biblical references to the Leviathan must remain a controversial topic of discussion which can only be clarified when additional information becomes available. Until the time comes when we are privy to such details, it will continue to remain one of the truly great mysteries of the Bible.

While on the subject of dinosaurs, it is essential for us to focus our discussion on another time related controversy that not only pits secular evolutionists against Christians, but also divides Christians into opposing camps as well! In dealing with this controversy and coming to grips with the vast amounts of data that needed to be researched, it came as a complete surprise to this author that much of the confusion and division stems from a state of apathy, blind ignorance, and/or a debilitating mindset that is fanatically opposed to exploring new discoveries and fresh interpretations within the context of a non-confrontational atmosphere. It will therefore, be necessary to begin with the fundamental data points of the controversy but before we start, it is absolutely critical that we first define a word that is decidedly one of the most misunderstood and mis-used words in the English lexicon.

That word is EVOLUTION...and it is best defined as CHANGE.

To a secular scientist, this word is frequently associated with, and used, to define the evolutionary processes of species transmutation from simple to complex organisms. Transmutation, sometimes referred to as common decent, is generally perceived to be the primary force driving the linked speciation of all life forms. Now that may appear to be a bit of a mouthful, but a simpler way of defining this is one kind of creature producing a completely new and different kind of creature! Examples could be whales producing sheep, birds producing pumpkins...or monkeys producing species *Homo sapiens*.

What is most important to understand is that this controversial concept must not, in any way, shape, or form, be considered a science. It is only a THEORY that is universally credited to Charles Darwin; though he was not the first or only individual to propose this concept. Darwin *was* among the first to compile research data and meticulous observations into a book called the *The Origin of Species*, published in 1859, and that is why this concept is most often associated with him.

There are several challenges which are associated with Darwin's Theory of Evolution, and we will address them later on in this chapter. For now it is essential to point out that scientists who embrace Darwin's theoretical concepts should properly clarify themselves and/or be referred to as DARWINIAN Evolutionists! The reason for this is simple; there are many scientists who subscribe to evolutionary processes but *do not* accept Darwin's theories. In fact there are many evolutionary scientists who became devout Christians as a direct result of their scientific exploration into the origins of life! That is because they came to the inescapable conclusion that sentient humans can only be the product of what some will call an Intelligent Designer, but what most Believers reverently refer to as the Divine Creator.

What is especially exciting to this author is that many Believers, including those who are currently reading this book, may already find themselves in complete agreement and comfortable with evolutionary processes that we have come to identify and understand today. And though there are many Believers who may not yet realize this fact, there are numerous evolutionary processes which are fully integrated and completely compatible within the Biblical Genesis story as well!

Many of us may recall the fascinating discoveries of Copernicus and Galileo, two of several pioneers, driven by intense curiosity, to understand the stars in the night sky and how our planet might interact with them. Nicolaus Copernicus sparked a revolution in the early 1500's by challenging the universally accepted geocentric model (also referred to as the Ptolemaic system), that planet Earth was the center of the universe and all heavenly bodies, including the Sun, revolved around it.<sup>5</sup> Copernicus believed the sun was the center of our Solar system and that all planets, including Earth, revolved around it. This is the heliocentric model and, in his day, it was commonly referred to as the Copernican system.<sup>6</sup> His mathematically-based observations became the topic of intense debates which raged back and forth for years, until Galileo Galilei, also a distinguished astronomer, took a stand in support of the heliocentric model. This was not, as one might suspect, communicated via public presentations or book publications, but through a private letter, addressed to Castelli, one of Galileo's former students.

The contents of that letter were made public and subsequently became the focus of an unsolicited Inquisition conducted by the Catholic Church. Galileo was, understandably anxious and consequently relieved, when the final verdict exonerated him; but it was, unfortunately, with the specific condition that he must agree to discontinue defending the Copernican position. In 1616 Galileo tentatively published a book called *Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief World Systems*, being extra careful to respect the inquisitional mandate; however it was to no avail. Even though the book was widely accepted by the public, it once again alluded to the heliocentric model as the favored scientific explanation, thus Galileo was again put on trial for his beliefs and his publication was subsequently banned.

In 1636, Galileo once more assembled his observations and published them in a book called *Discourses and Mathematical Demonstrations Relating to Two New Sciences*. He did this while living in Holland, which was outside the jurisdiction of the Inquisition. This book became very popular and even gained support by the Christian church. Two hundred years later the final nail was driven into the Ptolemaic model by Sir Isaac Newton, when he publically declared the Copernican – Galileo observations and calculations to be scientifically and mathematically correct.<sup>7</sup>

Today we would be hard pressed to find a single rational individual who still believes the Earth to be the center of our Solar system or that all planets, including the Sun, revolve around it. But consider the fact that just a few hundred years ago the geocentric model was widely accepted and firmly supported by the religious establishment. What is especially interesting is the fact that it took over two hundred years, *after* the Ptolemaic system was successfully challenged, before the general public or the church accepted this very simple and straightforward scientific explanation of how our planet relates to the sun within the Solar system.

One does not have to be a devoted student of history to realize there are countless examples of individuals who dared to swim against the current of social acceptance and instead, pioneered radical concepts which threatened to challenge well established and grounded perceptions of reality. Perhaps this phenomenon continually repeats itself because it is our human nature to seek an equilibrium which pushes our pre-wired sentience away from pain and towards pleasure. New ideas and concepts represent pain because they force us to trade the relative comfort and complacency of tradition for the mental anxieties and stresses associated with a leap into the unknown.

Many of us have been taught from as far back as we can remember, that science and the Bible are incompatible, especially with respect to the Genesis story. That is because there is an unequivocal timeline explanation that can only be expressed in either thousands, or billions of years. Today this controversy is commonly referred to as the Creation vs. Evolution debate and it would logically be assumed to pit religious institutions in opposition with the scientific community. However, this is not an entirely complete or accurate assessment because controversy rages, and thus battle lines have also been drawn, within both religious and scientific establishments. Amongst theologians, this division is commonly referred to as Young Earth Creationism (YEC) vs. Old Earth Creationism (OEC). In scientific circles the controversy is best defined as Darwinian Evolution vs. Intelligent Design.

It may surprise you to learn that this fractalization did not exist until about two hundred years ago. That is because, up until the mid 1800's,

the commonly accepted history of evolutionary thought was primarily dictated by the literal interpretation of the Genesis story, as found in the Judeo-Christian Bible, and evangelized by the Holy Church. This fundamentalist acceptance was abruptly challenged in 1844 when *Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation* was anonymously published by Robert Chambers, a prominent Scottish journalist at that time. In his book Chambers boldly addressed, and was consequently the first, to coin the idea of species transmutation (kinds creating new kinds), which has generally been credited to Charles Darwin, though his *The Origin of Species* publication was not released until 1859.<sup>8</sup>

Chambers' book became an instant best seller, despite criticisms emanating from both theologians and scientists, and it succeeded in paving the way for Darwin's more complete work on the subject of common descent, which was introduced fifteen years later. It was also during this time period that tremendous advances were being made, especially in specific areas of research including the natural and geological sciences, and paleontology. All these scientific discoveries were systematically bridging the heretofore unexplainable inconsistencies challenging literal interpretations of the Genesis story.

During this time Creationists were largely premillennialists, who were far more concerned with the Biblical eschatology defining the Rapture. They were not openly squeamish about the idea of God taking billions of years to create Earth, especially as it related to life and the Garden, which subsequently appeared after Earth was formed. Evolutionary geology was routinely conceded by most Creationists in order to keep pace with the explosion of scientific advancements. This was especially the case because of the numerous new fossil discoveries and radiometric dating systems that had been introduced for determining the age of rocks. Immediately following the post-Darwinian era, there were relatively few European scientists or clerics rejecting the antiquity of the earth or placing any geological significance with regard to the Biblical flood. Thus evolutionary apologists, Creationists, and scientific skeptics alike, usually adopted figurative interpretations of the first chapter of Genesis, or allowed that the six days of creation were not necessarily interpreted as literal 24-hour days.



In the United States, religious posturing and general acceptance of scientific advancements paralleled those of European countries. However, after the First World War these differences of opinion suddenly polarized and became political when public schools began introducing Darwinian evolutionary theories in the classroom. In 1925 the state of Tennessee responded by passing a law (the Butler Act) which prohibited the discussion of any theory, specifically those dealing with human origins or the contradiction of teachings found in the Bible.<sup>9</sup> This sparked a series of test cases, most notably the widely publicized Scopes Monkey Trial, which was subsequently upheld by the Tennessee Supreme Court and remained on the books until 1967. The U.S. Supreme Court eventually entered the fray by repealing all remaining creationist laws, with the *Epperson vs. Arkansas*, verdict in 1968. The basis of this decision was promulgated on the idea that banning the teaching of specific theories contravened the Establishment Cause, which essentially provides for freedom of speech while, at the same time, defining the necessity for the separation of church and state.<sup>9</sup>

This pivotal decision, paved the way for the creation of The National Science Foundation to advance the standardization of high school biology text books, via the Biological Sciences Curriculum Study review board. The ripple effect resulting from the *Epperson vs. Arkansas* verdict essentially polarized the religious establishment against the scientific community and is still largely responsible, to this day, for the adversarial perception held by most Christians, that science is the enemy.<sup>10</sup>

To exacerbate this unfortunate turn of events, a fundamentalist movement began to revitalize itself, based on *The New Geology*<sup>11</sup>, a 1923 book/college manual published by George McCready Price, a Seventh-day-Adventist and pseudo-geologist, who succeeded only in providing the inspirational framework for a subsequent publication called *The Genesis Flood*, published in 1960, by Henry Morris and John Whitcomb.<sup>12</sup> In their book, Morris and Whitcomb argued that science was perpetuating a conspiratorial hoax. It further claimed the Earth was geologically young and that the Great Flood had created most of the observed geological sedentary strata in the space of a single year. This fundamentalist movement, which was eventually re-labeled Young Earth Creationism, began to crystallize the concept that the universe, including Earth, is between 6,000 to 10,000 years old and that it was created in 6 literal 24-hour days. Furthermore the

leadership as much as claimed that anything discovered to the contrary, which might be declared by the scientific establishment as a new discovery, would be in fact, nothing more than an elaborate fabrication based on purposely skewed data and misguided interpretation.

Today Young Earth Creationism is summarily dismissed by the scientific community because of the more practical based and common sense realizations which have been derived from exhaustive experimentation, and observational due diligence in multiple fields of scientific research. The phenomenal advancements in the cosmological sciences, quantum physics, plate tectonics, and related geological sciences alone have rewarded us with a much clearer understanding of our planet as well as our relative position in the space time continuum of the universe. What is most astonishing, to those who endeavor to seek and understand, is how these fairly recent discoveries also closely parallel the Biblical record, *especially* with respect to how it relates to the Genesis story of creation!

National Gallup Poll indications are that as of 2012, about 46 percent of the population consider themselves Creationists. Of that percentage, the surveys indicate that since 1982, 40-to-50 percent of church-based constituencies interpret the Genesis story literally. 32 percent accept that the universe has existed for approximately 13.7 billion years, that the Earth was formed about 4.6 billion years ago, and that primitive life appeared approximately 2.5 billion years ago (the remaining percentage, about 18-to-20 percent, profess they do not think about it much at all).<sup>13</sup> What is most encouraging is that this fairly recent revolutionary upstart, commonly referred to as Old Earth Creationism (OEC), is steadily gaining support among Believers. It is spawning a Christian-based revival within the Church because there are many thinking individuals who are now realizing that simply ignoring science, or failing to confront the facts with a modicum of logic and forethought, is the metaphorical equivalent of placing one's self between the dog and the fire hydrant...especially with respect to the burgeoning Christian-based scientific community!

Actually, OEC represents a number of belief systems primarily endeavoring to come to grips with all these incredible scientific advancements. They have also endeavored to shed new light as well as provide a fresh new perspective on the sometimes less obvious scientific interpretations of the

Bible. What is especially refreshing about OEC's is their sincere effort to sublimate a confrontationist attitude and instead focus on the reasonable exchange of ideas for purposes of facilitating a clearer understanding of the great plan that has been so masterfully designed and deployed by our Creator. Unfortunately this seemingly compromising attitude, displayed by OEC's, appears to ignite the confrontational nature of YEC's who aggressively challenge any scriptural deviation or interpretation.

As stated earlier, the term Old Earth Creationism serves as a collective umbrella for a number of individual belief systems which generally agree on basic scientific explanations, but specifically disagree on some of the methodologies used by the Creator to actually achieve results. As an example, those who believe the Creator purposely pre-designed gradual evolutionary processes and then stepped back to let life progress more naturally are called Theists or Theistic Evolutionists. Those who accept the literal 24-hour day creation timeline but believe an unspecified gap of time existed between the geological and biological creation event periods are referred to as Gap Creationists. Those who believe in a figurative interpretation of the Genesis timeline are called Day-Age Creationists because they believe the Hebrew word *yom* refers to a non-specific time period that doesn't necessarily align with literal 24-hour day interpretations.

Again, it is important to point out that OEC beliefs are basically comprised of theories which attempt to moderate between Biblical scripture and new discoveries achieved through modern day science. As stated many times in this book, the Bible was specifically intended as a roadmap to salvation; however it is this author's passionate belief that it also contains a limitless supply of "Easter eggs" which once revealed, serve to illuminate and clarify the secrets of our existence with uncanny precision. We already know this to be the case, especially as it pertains to historical predictions. These predictions were written by inspired individuals who received visions and verbal communications which seemed, from their perspective, to be quite beyond description in relative terms we are able to comprehend today. In that vein this author chooses to propose yet one more OEC hybrid concept that is especially close to his heart because it was a revelation which resulted from just such an "Easter egg hunt."

Before proceeding, it is important we digress for a moment and try to make some sense about the mystery of time. Most of us can readily grasp our three dimensional world of length, width, and height, but when we inject the enigmatic properties of time, especially as it is considered to be our fourth dimension, it seems to confuse our sense of spatial reality. A philosopher by the name of Augustine of Hippo, a Roman bishop who lived in Carthage around 370 AD, said it best when he was asked the question, "What is time?" He answered, "If no one asks me, I know what it is; but if I wish to explain what it is, then I do not know." Perhaps this answer is a wee bit cyclical, but it clearly expresses the "Gordian Knot" which time represents.

Our most obvious measure of time is the clock; 60 seconds equals a minute, 60 minutes equals one hour, and 24 hours equals one day. What is especially important for the purposes of this discussion is our clock really does not measure time...it measures a process and that process seems to have very little to do with time because it is, in fact, celestial in nature. If we study the progression of discovery with regard to astronomy, we realize scientists and explorers came to understand and document the celestial process gradually by first discovering the fact that it takes the Earth approximately 24 hours to make one revolution, i.e., one day. Through mathematical computation, they eventually realized it takes approximately 365 days to complete one orbit around the sun. Astronomers then tagged all these measurable processes by labeling them hours, days, and years respectively. The real question is, do these measurements truly define time or are they more precisely defining the natural behavior of Planet Earth as it relates to our local solar system?

If we think of time in terms of planetary dynamics, then it may come as a surprise to some of us that this process is finite because we have, in fact, computed the absolute limits of this measurement system. Most regrettably, we have also plotted our eventual demise (that is, if you happen to be a non-believer). Scientists recently quantified the fact that the sun has a total functional lifespan of about 9.6 billion years. We know this from data collected during the process of creating the hydrogen bomb. The sun is nothing more than a nuclear fission reactor, and its elemental fueling component is hydrogen. By the size of the sun, we can quantify its hydrogen inventory and from bomb detonation tests here on Earth,

we have measured the consumption rate of hydrogen during the fission release, which results in our ability to calculate the approximate lifespan of the sun.<sup>14</sup>

Since the Earth is basically composed of stardust, many scientists have concluded the most accurate method of measuring the true age of the Earth would be to analyze samples of asteroids which have fallen to Earth. The reasoning behind this conclusion is that all the stars in our local universe, including Earth, came into existence at approximately the same moment (this is commonly referred to as The Big Bang Theory). Amazingly, every asteroid sample measured thus far turns out to be about 4.6 Billion years old, which, incidentally, coincides with our layered rock and soil determinations here on Earth. Taken together, this means the sun and therefore our local solar system only have about 5 billion years of time left:

$$(9,600,000,000 - 4,600,000,000 = 5,000,000,000).$$

To humanists, this seems like a lot of time. To chaos mathematicians, it creates a target-rich environment for catastrophic scenarios which threaten to dramatically shorten the human time span. To Christians, this finite time span will never be able to play itself out because God has promised us He will create a new heaven and a new Earth which will fix the problem at once and for all eternity!

One of our most celebrated theoretical physicists living in this century was Albert Einstein. He advanced a different measure of time when he postulated his Theory of Common Relativity which garnered him the Nobel Prize in 1921.<sup>15</sup> In this groundbreaking analysis, time is synonymous with distance, and distance is relative to the speed an object travels. Thus, if an object such as the Earth spins at the speed of one thousand miles per hour, it will complete one revolution in 24 hours because the Earth is approximately 25,000 miles in circumference. On the other hand, if it spins at 670 million miles per hour, then it will be revolving at the speed of light, which means the Earth will be spinning at 186,000 miles per second, thus completing a single revolution in about one-seventh of a second. Therefore, the measure of the time it takes for a single Earth revolution is computed by its mass and the speed at which it moves or, in this case, rotates.

If we were to become intergalactic voyagers in a spaceship traveling at the speed of light, then time would be measured differently for us because our concept of time would be relative to a combination of the light speed of the ship and the travel distance. If this fails to make your head ache, then consider the fact that it would take 25 thousand years, traveling at the speed of light, just to reach the center of our own Milky Way galaxy. As incredible as it seems, it would take 2.5 million light years to reach Andromeda, our closest neighboring galaxy. In either case, we would all die of old age long before reaching our destination, but the time distance we would travel according to Earth time standards would be a quantum leap compared to the total time distance measured by Earth revolutions. This means our measurable life span would be much longer and we would outlive our friends and loved ones, left behind on Earth, by several thousands of years while on board our spaceship.

All of a sudden, the speed of light does not seem all that fast when we consider the tremendous travel distances needed to reach another galaxy. For this, Einstein proposed yet another time measurement method which theoretically shortens travel time and is most often referred to as the Space-Time Continuum Theory. In this case, space and distance are also influenced by the weight of an object and its ability to warp or bend distance, thereby decreasing travel time between two points.

More recently, and as a direct result of our vastly improved technological ability to conduct astronomical observations, we now have a much better grasp of the universe we inhabit. We understand that time is a linear dimension that can only be experienced in the immediate and present sense. Put very simply, we can understand our measure of time to be relevant to a series of points plotted along the path of a given timeline. We do not have the capability of traversing back to the past or forward into the future, along that linear timeline. On second thought, perhaps this linearity could be seen as an exception when we consider the magic of movie making, coupled with a talented director's ability to project us into the past or future, through the magical orchestration of visionary and creative movie production skills.

We are just beginning to understand complex theories such as the multi-universe paradigm, quantum theory of parallel universes, multidimensional

string theory, and traversable wormholes. At the very least, these theoretical explanations provide us with the capacity to understand and verbalize our infantile perception of human reality as we continue to explore it. On a more practical note, we need to better understand the dimension of time because this author suspects there are more than just a few of us Believer's who would hesitate to take a 25,000-year trip to witness the center star mass of the Milky Way Galaxy, even after we had secured the gift of eternal life...after all, there are only so many in-flight movies a person can take!

While contemplating current interpretations of time, especially with respect to Common Relativity, it struck this author that the Bible seemed to contradict itself when it referred to time in the Genesis story as being a 24-hour day. This contradiction was based on the passage within the book of Psalms, where we see time expressed as ten thousand "God years," compared to a single earthly moment. An exciting "V-8" moment suddenly occurred when this author discovered that the individual who recorded the Genesis story was the very same person who authored the ninetieth chapter of Psalms! It was especially amazing after discerning that Moses had this chapter buried amongst a book, largely credited to David; thus making it a truly wonderful Easter egg discovery! We should also consider the fact that when reading Genesis 1:1-30 together with Psalms 90:4, it clearly becomes evident that it was Moses, not Einstein, who first comprehended and accurately recorded the Theory of Common Relativity! When we consider that several centuries of time elapsed before we were able to rediscover and verbalize this very same concept, it subsequently bolsters the fact that the Bible could have only come from a divinely inspired source.

Now let us consider another common occurrence that we are all quite familiar with today, especially as it relates to time differences here on Earth. If we live in Los Angeles and call someone in New York, we have to allow for a difference in time. We usually express these differences in terms of time zones which delineate spans of geographical distance. As an example 1:00PM, Pacific Standard Time (PST) is 3 hours different than 4:00PM, Eastern Standard Time (EST) because of a 2,800 mile difference in distance.

Suppose we create a hypothetical situation and say that John lives on the west coast of the United States and is having a phone conversation with

Martha, who lives on the east coast. At precisely 1:00PM (PST), John turns on a light switch and for the first time sees a new desk lamp, that he recently built, cast a warm light over the surface of his writing desk. John is so excited he asks Martha to document the following sentence; “And John said, let there be light, and there was light at precisely 1:00PM.”

The question that we have to ask ourselves is would it be reasonable to expect that Martha should automatically make a 3 hour time correction difference while recording John’s words or would she be more inclined to write down the event and time exactly as John had dictated it? Perhaps we can take this example one step further and say that John lived on a planet in the Andromeda galaxy, which is about 2.5 million light years distant from where Martha lives on planet Earth. Now, is it still reasonable for us to assume Martha will attempt to make a time zone correction for this vast difference in relative time? Perhaps it would be more logical for us to accept the fact that she would record this event, exactly as John had dictated it to her, from his location somewhere out there in the Andromeda Galaxy.

Consider the fact that when God was dictating to Moses, he had no idea where the Creator may or may not have been physically located, especially relative to Moses’ Solar based time zone located here on planet Earth. If that is the case then when God asked Moses to record the Genesis story, precisely as it was being dictated to him, is it not reasonable for us to expect that Moses would do just that! And since Moses evidently understood that God was most likely in another time zone, or for that matter, possibly even another space time dimension, it would be difficult at best, for Moses to have attempted any time-based correction between their respective time zones. Of course we know Moses was well aware of these time zone differences because he specifically made note of this fact while recording the Genesis story and the subsequent chapter included in the book of Psalms!

At the risk of adding yet another theory to the already crowded arena of theological speculation, this author suggests that we pause and consider the possibility that God was in or near the same neighborhood where His creative processes began; that is, near the Singularity which raised the curtain on a spectacular show of creative power and glory. For purposes of simplicity, let us label this time zone Cosmic Clock Time (CCT). Our



planetary time zone, which we will call Solar Clock Time (SCT), is located approximately 13.75 billion light years distant from that Singularity event noted in CCT. This means that time is relative to the specific location where the event began...as opposed to the relative position where it was eventually being recorded by Moses. This theory specifically deals with time as it relates to relative time differences in location therefore it would be more appropriate if we refer to it as Relative Earth Creationism (REC).

Aside from REC's basis in simple practicality, it also boasts the potential ability to bridge the chasm that currently separates YEC and OEC Believers. Moses, who physically resided in a Middle Eastern province SCT, was recording events as they were being dictated to him, by the Creator, who logically could have been located somewhere near the Singularity occurring in CCT. This means what God witnessed as six days worth of creative production would translate to approximately 13.75 billion years of creative effort, relative to our earthly time position in the Universe. This is also consistent with the scientific premise that when we gaze on the light radiating from distant stars and galaxies, we are actually looking at the history of time itself, as it specifically relates to the vastness of our known universe from our tiny earthly perspective.

It is important to note that the REC concept proposed by this author is only a theory, but it certainly poses a very interesting question. Is it possible that a simple clarification of time zones might be the key to understanding the reason God chose to measure His creative processes in terms of days while dictating that same process to someone located billions of years distant from where the event began? This becomes even more interesting when we consider the fact that the Creator is capable of residing in or communicating through at least ten additional dimensions, many of which we are still quite unable to comprehend or even conceive of, with our present day limitations and knowledge of the cosmos.

It should be noted that the initial inspiration for developing the REC theory resulted from reading *The Genesis Code*, by Daniel Friedmann.<sup>16</sup> While Mr. Friedmann proposes a theory, based on the mathematical calculations obtained from a number of inspired Hebrew source documents,

he essentially arrives at the same result by demonstrating the astounding similarity that exists between the Genesis story and what the scientific community has discovered about the progressive steps involved with the development of our universe and planet Earth. These steps are evolutionary in nature but then, so are many of the progressive steps detailed in the Genesis story. Remember, just because evolutionary processes are involved, which sometimes take billions of years to execute, does not mean they, in any way, are comparative to Darwin's theories of evolutionary development! Darwinian Theories exclude God's participation while the REC Theory embraces it and recognizes the Creator as the only one capable of masterminding such an incredibly complex yet simple design. A design plan that incidentally begins with nothing...and that is something only a Divine Creator is capable of orchestrating.

With that in mind, let us take a closer look at the Genesis story as it is compared to what science has recently revealed about how the Universe and planet Earth were created. It is important to note that the unimaginable lengths of time between the Biblical creation and the progressive evolutionary steps, detailed below, are admittedly uncomfortable and can even make some of us, including this author, become a bit twitchy. That is because many of us were raised in a different period of time. It was a time when we were naively uninformed and considered the universe to be static and unending instead of dynamic and ever-expanding. A time when there was no reason to question the literal interpretation of days instead of epochs. It was a time when science, for the first time began to view the heavens with space-based telemetry, and a time when the geological science of radiometric dating and plate tectonics was still in its infancy. Today God has blessed us with amazing technological advancements and it is ultimately to our untrammled astonishment that these "new" discoveries were already documented within the Bible, all this time.

For purposes of expediency the comparative versions of the Creation story, according to the Bible and modern day science, are divided into two columns. The left CCT column presents the Biblical account and is paraphrased as needed, for purposes of brevity. The right SCT column also contains paraphrased summations derived from multiple sources, and represents a general consensus of scientific agreement.

COSMIC TIME ZONE	EARTH TIME ZONE
DAY 1, 24-HOURS (CCT):	13.75 – 7.5 BILLION YEARS (SCT):
<p>In the beginning (which is not actually the beginning) God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void, and darkness (chaos) was on the face of the deep (space). And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters (everything in existence). Then God said “let there be light”; and there was light.</p> <p><i>Genesis 1:1-3 (NKJV)</i></p>	<p>At the moment of the Singularity event, there was a compact ball of rapidly expanding super heated plasma, an intense opaque mass of pure energy and matter from which no light could escape. Light appeared for the first time when the mass expanded and cooled to a point where gravitational forces were sufficiently reduced to allow electromagnetic radiation to appear.</p>

The parenthetical explanations inserted within the CCT text are used to clarify the intended meanings of certain Hebrew words. As an example, the Hebrew word for “beginning” is *bereshit*, and in this instance it signifies the fact that God never had a beginning nor will He ever have an end, since God is everlasting. Therefore the fact that this was the first day of creation should not be interpreted as the first day of the Creator’s existence because His existence, in fact, precedes the creation event.

As stated above, the Singularity description only represents a general summation of events immediately before and after it occurred. For comparison purposes the actual moment of energy release can best be visualized as a steam boiler gradually building pressure until energy is suddenly released when water converts to steam. The resultant energy released from the Big Bang resulted from a condensed energy mass of super-heated elementary particles that were miraculously orchestrated to create an inhabitable universe. As expansion proceeded, hydrogen began to appear as a result of falling temperatures which allowed atomic nuclei to form. As nuclear fission decreased from temperature reductions, the stage was set for nucleosynthesis (production of other elements). At this time the universe remained dark but pristine gases clumped together to form the first stars which synthesized heavy elements crucial for the building blocks of life. Radiation released from early short-lived supernovas, ionized neutral hydrogen and helium inventories, thus creating a glowing neon luminescence – and becoming the first light in our infant universe.

<b>COSMIC TIME ZONE</b>	<b>EARTH TIME ZONE</b>
<b>DAY 2, 24-HOURS (CCT):</b>	<b>8 – 4 BILLION YEARS (SCT):</b>
<p>Thus God made the firmament (expanse), and divided the waters (everything in existence) which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament; and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven...</p> <p><i>Genesis 1:6-7 (NKJV)</i></p>	<p>Protogalaxies began to form which were the forerunners of galaxies such as the Milky Way. It was also at this time that our local Solar system as well as planet Earth began to materialize and solidify. Massive volcanism below earth's crust was fueled by radioactive depletion.</p>

The discussion of the initial firmament division in the Genesis story is often interpreted to mean the formation of the atmosphere, thus separating the surface of the planet from space. In this case the word firmament is more accurately translated to define the presence of space itself, as opposed to solid mass. What is particularly interesting about this passage is that the forces which combined elements together and subsequently formed them into protogalaxies and planets was, until fairly recently, unknown. In 2003 experiments, conducted aboard the International Space Station, ultimately solved this perplexing paradox, which is often referred to as planetary accretion.<sup>17</sup>

Astronaut Donald Pettit poured regular table salt into a plastic bag which contained water. To everyone's surprise the salt granules commenced to clump together forming miniature spheres which remained in that state though colliding into the walls of the plastic bag or with other salt globule formations. He also observed smaller globules joining together with larger ones and thus become larger. While hardly considered quantitative science, this experiment eventually led to the explanation of a particle attraction process called electrostatic approximation. Though the electric charge between each grain has yet to be fully quantified, the experiment proves charges and electrostatic exchanges occur between protoplanetary nebulae thus causing them to bind together within the vacuum of space. When this phenomenon of planetary accretion is considered in tandem with the laws of gravity, it helps us better understand just how planets and galaxies were originally created as well as why they will always appear spherical or, as is the case with black holes, spiral in nature.

<b>COSMIC TIME ZONE</b>	<b>EARTH TIME ZONE</b>
<b>DAY 3, 24-HOURS (CCT):</b>	<b>3.75 – 1.75 BILLION YEARS (SCT):</b>
<p>And the earth brought forth grass, the herb that yields seed according to its kind, and the tree that yields fruit, whose seed is within itself according to its own kind.  <i>Genesis 1:12 (NKJV)</i></p>	<p>Earth cooled and dry land masses surfaced as iron-rich seas formed. Photo-synthetic bacterial algae and oxygen producing cyanobacteria (stromatolites) appeared. Primordial plant life began to develop and thus pave the way for more complex plant life to forms.</p>

It took several millions of years to gradually sculpt the Earth itself; a process that is still happening to this day. Plate tectonics or continental drift, as it is sometimes referred to, began as a tentative theory studying large-scale movements of Earth’s crust (lithosphere) over the lower molten sub-mantel layer (asthenosphere). The theory was substantiated in the 1960’s as a result of an intense oceanic sonar exploration program which consequently uncovered the phenomenon of sea-floor spreading. Today the science of plate tectonics is revealing the fact that our entire planet behaves much like a giant organism that is alive, dynamic, and ever-changing. Continental plates continue the processes of subduction and sub-oceanic expansion, like gigantic puzzle pieces floating on an ocean of molten lava.<sup>18</sup>

Tectonic action explains the source and frequency of earthquakes, and why we have so many active volcanoes circumventing the “ring of fire” along the Pacific Rim. It explains why the continent of Iceland continues to increase in width along the “walls of fire” fissure expansions, where two continental plates constantly bump against each other, and why the subduction of the African plate beneath the European plate continues to raise the peaks of the Himalayas, the highest mountain range in the world, by two inches every year.

During the early stages of planetary development there were successive periods when mantel plates combined together into super-continentals, or broke apart to form smaller land masses with vast inland seas. The mantel subduction process sparked periods of intensified volcanic activity, and at the same time, pushed up massive mountain ranges that, over millennia of time, eventually disappeared once again under shallow seas. This continual raising and lowering of land masses was responsible for the

## ARKEOLOGY

successive layers of sedentary buildup that are visible today in places like the Grand Canyon. It also explains how the presence of microbial organisms, which can only exist under water, appears on our highest mountain tops today.

There is an overwhelming body of scientific evidence substantiating the fact that geological layers of rock, much older than 6,000 years, consistently reveal specific types of organic fossils and, more importantly, plant pollens which managed to exist in response to certain climatic conditions. Furthermore, these layers, along with their entombed victims, seldom deviate regardless of where the particular discovery was made or how catastrophic their extinction-level event might have been. In simple terms, the individual geologic layers which make up the Earth’s crust tell a story in much the same way scientists extract information from tree rings. Each layer faithfully stores numerous bits of organic and inorganic information detailing what environmental conditions were present when that particular layer was exposed.

The appearance of life also contributed to the development of our planet thus the third day was a major milestone for the Creator. Though these first primitive plant algae’s and bacterial organisms had little resemblance to the complex seed-bearing plant life which followed, it was never the less essential because they were linked to the continued development of planetary geology, water purification, and atmospheric enrichment. Early Earth was not conducive to oxygen breathing plants or creatures because the atmosphere was extremely dense and composed of noxious gases. The entire planet was gradually terra-formed by these tiny algae plants and cyanobacteria, which complimented the process of creating higher life forms.

COSMIC TIME ZONE	EARTH TIME ZONE
<b>DAY 4, 24-HOURS (CCT):</b>	<b>1.75 BILLION – 750 MILLION YEARS (SCT):</b>
<p>Then God said, “Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years...He made the stars also.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Genesis 1:14, 16 (NKJV)</i></p>	<p>Atmosphere on Earth was overcast and opaque. Rising concentrations of oxygen, from vegetation, cleared the atmosphere which then became translucent, thus the sun, moon, and stars were visible in sky for the first time. Sunlight was the key ingredient needed to promote the explosion of complex plant life.</p>

It seems a considerable amount of confusion and controversy has existed because of this seemingly out of sequence step in the creative processes of planetary development. Young Earth apologists often refer to this text as proof that gradual evolutionary processes are improbable because plant life, which was created on the third day, could only survive for a brief period of time without sunlight, which apparently was not added until the fourth day. Then again, if the Sun and Moon were not present until the fourth day, one might ask how YEC's can be certain the first three days of creation were 24-hour days!

The key to unlocking this enigma resides within the verses themselves. In the first verse of Genesis we read that God *created* the heavens and the Earth; this is clearly defined as a *creative* step. Verse two also informs us that darkness *hovered* throughout the universe, which also appears to be part of a creative process. However, in verse 14 we read that God says *let* there be light.... Folks, this is not a creative step but a simple command statement! It is unarguably clear in the first verse of Genesis that God had already created the universe (heavens), and in verse two we learn that darkness also hovered over the planet, so why should we now insist that the heavenly stars were not created until the fourth day? If we read these verses objectively it becomes abundantly clear that the sun and stars were already in place, but for some reason, they were not visible from Earth's perspective because something (hovering darkness) was obstructing the view.

The simple facts are that evolutionary processes were in play here. The atmospheric opacity was due to the presence of noxious gases and heavy metal elements suspended in a thick cloud enveloping the planet. Our understanding now, which by the way results from fairly recent scientific enlightenment, is that the Creator introduced simple forms of plant life, which was responsible for oxygenating the atmosphere. Oxidation cleared the atmosphere so the heavens would become visible, from a planetary surface perspective, for the first time since Earth formed. These sequential steps thus paved the way for complex seed-bearing plant life to follow.

This is a clear example of how science has helped us better understand the Biblical creation event and the methodologies of how the plan actually unfolded. It is not a case of interpretation but rather clarification of God's plan and how it continues to unfold as more of its mysteries are revealed.

COSMIC TIME ZONE	EARTH TIME ZONE
DAY 5, 24-HOURS (CCT):	750 MILLION – 250 MILLION YEARS (SCT):
<p>Then God said, “Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures...”  <i>Genesis 1:20 (NKJV)</i></p>	<p>Cambrian Era; Marine life becomes dominant followed by the initial appearance of major modern phyla 450M marks the beginning of the Cambrian Explosion.</p>

The underwater universe is a fascinating world that is quite capable of sustaining itself independently from the world above. The reason the Creator began with the development of life here is because the sea would eventually provide sustenance as well as other mineral based ecosystems critical to the survival of land based creatures. As is evidenced by the sequential steps involved in the geological evolution of the planet, we can see a similarly planned sequence in the development of marine life.

Fossil and trace-fossil records have consistently demonstrated that multi-cellular life began to develop, followed by progressively more complex life forms that featured bilateral symmetry, meaning that they possessed a well defined top and bottom as well as front and back. About 535 million years later marks the beginning of what scientists refer to as the Cambrian explosion, followed closely by the Great Ordovician Bio-diversification Event. It appears the environmental stage was set for the introduction of a biological diversity unparalleled since the evolution of the planet. It was during this time that many new invertebrates such as trilobites and mollusks with exoskeletons took center stage, but that was quickly followed by the appearance and diversification of true vertebrates, meaning marine life sporting backbones. Vertebrates split into two groups which consisted of the cartilaginous (soft bone) type such as sharks, and rays; and those having hard bones, such as whales, and dolphins.

After 85 million years, the Cambrian and Ordovician periods ended with two major extinction level events which eliminated most life. Following that, the first tetrapods (four-limbed animals) began to emerge in the fossil record and these were a precursor to God’s creation-based introduction of all amphibians, reptiles, birds, and mammals.



<b>COSMIC TIME ZONE</b>	<b>EARTH TIME ZONE</b>
<b>DAY 6, 24-HOURS (CCT):</b>	<b>250 MILLION YEARS (SCT):</b>
<p>And God made the beasts of the earth according to its kind, cattle according to its kind, and everything that creeps on the earth according to its kind. And God saw that it was good...Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness..."</p> <p><i>Genesis 1:25-26 (NKJV)</i></p>	<p>Permian Triassic Era; Dinosaurs became dominant for 150 Million years. Several intermediate Extinction Level Events (ELE's) occurred, ending with the massive KT-ELE (65 Million years ago). KT-ELE destroyed 90% of all life and was followed by a rapid repopulation of mammals and land animals which became the dominant species. The first hominids suddenly appeared during this time.</p>

What strikes this author as particularly amazing is how closely the scientific account parallels the Genesis story. In fact just glancing at the two accounts, without noting dates or times, reveals more than just coincidental similarities. For instance, how is it that science discovered life began in the seas before it began on land? And why did we discover the sequence of birds appearing after marine life was already present, but before the major appearance of land animals? The similarities are especially remarkable when comparing the geological sequence of events preceding the creation of life.

Of all the theories proposed in this book, perhaps the idea that the Creation process may have taken more than seven literal days will cause many to turn away in righteous indignation and shut out any further discussion regarding this subject. Before doing so, however, this author will ask that you consider one other important point. The literal time it took our Creator to produce His masterpiece has absolutely nothing to do with an individual's salvation. The fact that Relative Earth Creationism attempts to ameliorate Young Earth Creationist beliefs and possibly even Darwin's Theory of Evolution, is the primary motivation for proposing an alternative concept of time.

Darwinian Evolutionists do not accept the idea of a Divine Creator; therefore they are forced to base their theories on undefined lengths of time. The reason for this is straightforward; unless there are infinite spans

of time involved in evolutionary equations, the possibilities are finite with respect to the sum of their parts equaling any chance for that first spark of life to have actually occurred without the presence of God. The old saying, “if given enough time, anything can happen” is perhaps a better way of verbalizing this fact. The pivotal issue which Darwinian Evolutionists are unable to address is how *something* comes from *nothing!* That is why Darwinian Evolutionists are adamantly opposed to the Big Bang Theory.

Though it pains this author to admit it, Young Earth Creationists are also opposed to the Big Bang Theory. They do recognize God as the creator, however they believe the sequence of events proposed in the Singularity are not specifically evidenced or clearly documented in the Bible; therefore they are a product of human speculation and/or interpretation, which is unacceptable. That is extremely unfortunate because the only answer YEC’s can provide when they physically look up and see the Andromeda Galaxy radiating light that was generated 2.5 million light years previously, is that God only made its luminescence *appear* to be that old...but this is really not the case! Unfortunately that sounds a lot like echoes from past Ptolemaic model fantasists, insisting the Earth was the center of the universe, despite any scientific discoveries to the contrary.

Einstein above all others realized the theological implications of his theory of Common Relativity, since his widely accepted equations indirectly implied a finite creation date for the expanding universe. This finite implication put Einstein in contradiction with other leading secular scientists but, more importantly, his personal atheistic beliefs as well. The probability of a singular point of Creation troubled Einstein to such depths he postulated an unquantified cosmic force of repulsion to cancel off the attractive forces of gravity. He created, as he termed it, a “cosmological constant” which would eliminate both deceleration and expansion to the finite universe model originally proposed by Edmund Halley in 1715.

If one studies the style of his mathematical equations after 1915, one can almost see his desperation as he tries to deny the overwhelming evidence of a divinely engineered Creation event. In the end, his cosmological constant “fixes” were short lived and proved contradictory to his original theories. As early as 1919, Einstein admitted his cosmological constant was “gravely detrimental to the formal beauty of the theory.” After the

1931 publication of Hubble's law of redshifts, Einstein eliminated the cosmological constant from his equations altogether and conceded that its introduction "was the greatest mistake in my life." Sadly, Einstein never did accept the doctrine of a personal God. He was unable to resolve the paradox of God's omnipotent love in conjunction with creating human beings who were subsequently forced to take responsibility for personal choices.

The primary purpose of this book, with regard to the subject at hand, is to simply point out the fact that both Christians and scientists are attempting to define the parameters of our existence, but we are scrounging to do so with incomplete information. Today we have the benefit of many new and exciting discoveries but there are still so many variables which exist in our feeble attempts to define the properties associated with the creation and purpose of our existence alone, to arrive at any consensus which might end the controversy once and for all. The fact is there is solid evidence which indicates that life existed much earlier than a few thousand years ago, but there is also irrefutable evidence to prove that life as we know it was engineered by a vastly more intelligent Creator, who this author will point out, is not subjected to *any* dimensional or time zone limitations!

Darwinian Evolutionists clearly ricochet off the preponderance of evidence to the contrary when they try to assign the wondrous creation of man to the same natural evolutionary processes which stabilized the surface of our planet or for that matter the solar system.

The point of all this is to pose a very important question; how should we, especially as Christians, measure time with regard to the creation of the Earth and its visible heavens? If we did not measure time by natural celestial processes within our solar system, then how should time be measured...or can it be measured? It seems this is not just a present-day dilemma because we can point to numerous examples where ancient civilizations seemed to be obsessed with defining time and thus establishing ways to measure it.

One example was an oopart discovered in 1900 by some sponge divers working off the Greek island of Antikytheros. The divers uncovered a ship full of bronze statues and other artifacts which sank between 80 -

50 BC One of the items recovered was a corroded lump of bronze and wood which was sent to the National Museum in Athens. No one could figure out what it was until 1958, when Dr. Derek J. de Solla Price, of Cambridge University, decided to rebuild the device in hopes it would shed some light as to what it might be. To his amazement, it turned out to be an intricate clock which was used to tell not only the time of day, but also the risings, settings, and phases of the moon, along with the tracking positions of Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter and Saturn, all with astonishing accuracy.<sup>19</sup>

The reconstructed machine was contained in a box and featured more than twenty delicate gears, intermeshed in a differential arrangement. In Dr. Price's model, a crank spindle set all of this into motion, but he noted the original instrument was turned by an unknown power source not preserved in the shipwreck. Other classic examples include Stonehenge and the Nazca Lines which defied modern-day logic for decades, yet turned out to be giant celestial time calculators. They were specifically built for the purpose of predicting the passage of time by the sun, moon, and stars, thus establishing predictable global climate trends which were affecting agricultural growing seasons.

A more astonishing example of the ancients' attempts to define time was found on seven Babylonian tablets which were copied from a much earlier version also referred to in the tablet text. The story is called the *Epic of Creation* and is more commonly identified by archaeologists from its opening words, *Enuma elis*. The story poetically describes the process by which our solar system came into existence. It seems, as is recorded in the epic, that while our planetary system was ordering itself during the early stages of development, a large planet entered the system and its magnetic force fields realigned several of the other planets while, at the same time, heading on a collision course with Earth. The invading planet did not score a direct hit but rather a glancing blow which broke away two large portions from our planet. The larger portion fell into Earth's gravitational pull and became the moon, while the other portion granulated to become the "hammered bracelet" or what we refer to today as the asteroid belt located between Mars and Jupiter. What is most interesting is the fact that while the planet invader (called *Nibiru*) was colliding with Earth, the text specifically identifies this as the precise moment when time began for Earth. In other words, this was the moment when Earth was thrust

into its new orbit so time could be measured by its 24-hour revolution between day and night.

At first, this does not appear to be much of a revelation, since the Biblical account also indicates that in the beginning the Earth was without form. Only after the sun and the moon appeared did it become the “morning and evening of the *first day*.” The *Enuma elis*, however, goes one step further because it metaphorically identifies the fact that Earth now has its own separate and distinct measure of time, as opposed to *Nibiru* which continues to measure time according to its 3,600-year counter-centric orbit around the sun! This incredible statement can only mean that the measure of time with respect to the Sumerian *Epic of Creation* is relative to the cosmology of a particular given planet. It also means that the Theory of Relativity was understood by someone long before Albert Einstein made his theoretical contributions to humanity.<sup>20</sup>

In light of the above information, perhaps we should seriously consider the fact that scientists and Believers might have more in common than they think. Is it not possible that the universe and subsequently the solar system all began as an evolutionary process which started with the “Big Bang” approximately 13.75 billion years ago? Could it be that early life forms appearing on the stabilized surface of the Earth were the direct result of a God-ordained process which was also part of His overall Creation plan? What if the sole purpose for the appearance and sudden disappearance of dinosaurs, along with their food sources, were nothing more than to create a future natural resource of petroleum for humanity to exploit? Is it not possible that the “Edenic Test” was simply the culmination of a creative evolutionary process which could have taken billions of years...as we define time in our Solar-based time zone?

As it has been stated many times before in this book, this author adamantly insists God does not just wave a magic wand to make something instantaneously come into existence. Of course, He could do so if He chose, but the Creator is a God of order and He creates this order out of chaos by establishing natural and consistent laws. These laws do not restrict the Creator in any way; rather they liberate His creative powers while, at the same time, *guaranteeing* a consistent result which is, by definition, the opposite of a chaotic environment. Just because we do not

understand or cannot explain a miracle does not mean there are no natural laws behind its execution. The fact that we have difficulty defining time by God's standards does not mean we must therefore interpret the term "days" mentioned in Genesis literally. The fact that Earth may be the result of a long and gradual evolutionary process does not take away from the fact that God systematically introduced His ultimate creation and subsequently had to set a plan in motion to save man from himself.

This brings us to our final branch of scientific research presently referred to as Intelligent Design (ID). This movement represents a political powder keg which is currently struggling for equal exposure in the classrooms of our most prestigious universities in the United States. The central posit of their theory, which is that life was engineered by a higher intelligence, would seem to be a breath of fresh air since secular evolutionists are admittedly failing to identify the original source of life via Darwinian processes.

As geneticists probe deeper into the complex wonders of a single living cell, they continually bump up against the mathematical absurdity that sensate life simply evolved. Yet contrary to what seems logical, proponents of ID who are attempting to provide an alternative posit are systematically discredited and expelled from centers of higher learning. Even students dare not mention the fact that these theories should deserve equal time for debate in the classroom if they expect to pass a course. In spite of all this, the swelling ranks of ID proponents simply maintain that the complex wonders of the human body *must* be the result of an as yet to be identified higher intelligence. Their premises are based on twin concepts identified as Irreducible Complexity and Specified Complexity. What this simply means is there are many examples of organisms which are too complex to be the result of natural processes.<sup>21</sup> "The scientific community considers ID to be a pseudoscience because it lacks empirical support and offers no tenable hypothesis."

Academia seems to fear ID is merely a clandestine effort to reintroduce religion back into the classroom. Richard Dawkins, an Oxford University graduate and author of *The God Delusion*, is currently considered by many to be the most vocal leader in the charge against the legitimacy of ID.<sup>22</sup> When asked the origin of the first living cell, he proposed, in a taped in-

terview by the way, that it could have come from a “more intelligent race of beings which, of course, evolved through a natural selective process. They then created a pan-spermatic formula which sparked the first living cell in the primordial soup from which man evolved.” Well, pardon this author’s bluntness, but did IQs suddenly drop, or did professor Dawkins just propose an intelligent design by an unidentified higher intelligence? Is this not, in fact, precisely what the ID community has been trying to say...save for the one race creating the other race nonsense?

In spite of the fact that the battle lines have clearly been drawn, Darwinian Evolutionists still cannot answer two simple questions; where did the *first* living cell come from and how did it suddenly become animated? One would think that if these questions could not be satisfactorily answered then at least other ideas should be presented and debated. In fact, is it not part of the stated mission for schools of higher learning to diligently pursue *all* knowledge for the betterment of mankind? One would think this pursuit should include *all* possibilities and not just the theories of one man who lived in the 1800’s, based his posits on casual observation, and knew absolutely nothing about DNA encoding or the limitless dynamic complexities comprised in the universe of a single living cell.

Historically speaking, there is a much darker side to Darwinian Evolution which further confuses the case for natural selection with respect to the ascension of species *Homo sapiens*. When Charles Darwin first advanced his evolutionary theories in 1859, the title of one of his initial papers was *The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection or the Preservation of Favored Races in the Struggle for Life*. If there was ever a case of the title saying it all, this certainly is a prime example!

In 1925, another book was published which also spent considerable time addressing the advancement of eugenic sciences towards the preservation of “favored races;” it was called *Mein Kampf* and its author eventually became the architect for the extermination of over 2.6 million supposedly “racially inferior” humans during the Holocaust. What is truly astonishing is that Adolph Hitler, possibly without knowing it, closely paralleled Charles Darwin’s Common Decent theories and, furthermore, considered his work to be an important contribution to the purification of the human species through the application of euthanasia. First Hadamar and

then the “Final Solution” death camps were both products of this determination to advance the preservation of “favored races” towards a more predictable outcome (in this case, for Nazi Germany).

The infinite complexity which is man is most certainly not the product of natural selection via transmutational speciation processes, and that is an irrefutable mathematical fact which has been quantified by numerous luminaries, including the notable mathematician and Nobel recipient, John Nash. The *Governing Dynamics* theory (also referred to as the Nash Equilibrium) which catapulted Professor Nash into the limelight was not the singular intent of his thesis as indicated in the popular movie *A Beautiful Mind*. Of a far more important note were his theoretical rebuttals to an earlier work written by Adam Smith, commonly referred to as “the father of economics,” who compared the strengths of capitalism to Darwin’s theory of natural selection. Nash maintained Smith’s ideas needed to be revised and, without realizing it, set about mathematically proving Darwin was all wet because in a strictly strong survive – weak perish environment, sensate humans would, by necessity, cancel themselves out of existence since the strongest specimens must instinctively protect their personal best interest and turn on the weaker specimens until there was no one left to propagate the species.<sup>23</sup> In other words, there can be no emotion in a world dictated by natural selection because species survival is ruled by cold, calculated, ruthlessness (and, in Hitler’s case, one might add, a generous dose of clinical insanity)!

Many of us are familiar with the various random event results models extrapolated from mathematical probabilities proving the impossibility of achieving even a close proximity which would resemble a human cell, much less a complete body, through transmutational processes. Yet, in the face of this overwhelming mathematical evidence to the contrary, we are still dumbfounded as centers of higher learning stubbornly refuse to push any other curriculum except Darwinian Evolutionary Theory!

So what makes humans different, and how did we manage to survive? The Bible tells us we were made in our Creator’s image, which immediately sets us apart from all other creatures and makes us unique. If you want to know what our Creator looks like...well, just look in a mirror and you will have a pretty good idea. Of course, we are currently a distorted



and perverse copy of our original perfection but, even with that in mind, we are truly a marvelous creation to behold!

The real clincher for this author, with respect to a divinely ordained creation, can be reduced to a single question; how would an emotion-based concept like mercy evolve in a world dictated by Darwinian processes? An environment based on the laws of natural selection would never allow mercy or compassion to flourish and survive because it would be identified as a weakness and immediately cancelled out as sure as the superior mathematical attributes represented by the overpowering nature of strength and aggression. The fact we can grasp the significance of this singular emotion is irrefutable proof that we could only be the product of a Divine Creator's love. He not only blessed us with the emotion of mercy, He also enhanced the model with the ability to love, the greatest of all gifts. How could either of those emotions have evolved without Divine intervention in an otherwise ruthless and cruel world? Perhaps the real irony here is that we humans were created so perfectly it gave birth to satanic jealousies in another species, thereby introducing the concept of evil to an otherwise perfectly balanced equation!

Intelligent Design may be a pseudoscience and it may not be the best alternative to be considered in our schools and universities, but at least it makes an attempt to explain what has thus far been completely unexplainable about how we arrived on this planet and what our purpose is.

At this point, it would seem that enough *time* has been spent on the topic of *time*, so let us get back to the subject at hand, which is the construction of the Ark. Now that we are reasonably assured there was no need for Noah to make room for dinosaurs, and since we have exacerbated the reality of time, thereby sensibly addressing the question of where his source of bitumen may have come from, we can now turn our attention back to the logistics of the project.

Let us assume Noah and his work force had the benefit of resinous wood to build all the supporting framework, outer skin and inner decks and tar extracted from underground reserves to seal all joints, thereby making it water-tight. Now it is time to explore the structural challenges of building a large ship capable of withstanding all the outside forces it would likely encounter. As to what the Ark was subjected to when the Flood waters

arrived remains a complete mystery. The only recorded details we can consistently rely on come from either the Bible or the Epic of Gilgamesh. The Bible's narration of the water action really does not sound all that bad, since it specifically uses the term "rising water", which submerged the ground and eventually lifted the boat as it systematically continued to cover all land surfaces to a depth of 22 feet or more. It also states that rain fell (albeit in "mighty torrents") for 40 days and 40 nights.

The Epic of Gilgamesh rendition provides a little more harrowing detail because it specifically records "And when the storm came to an end and the terrible waterspouts ceased..." Also, in another portion of this story, it denotes violent wind action which buffeted the boat from side to side amongst the waves.

Both versions do not specifically address earthquakes, tsunamis, lava flows, tectonic shifts, massive fires, landslides, or the threat of dangerous encounters with any treacherous rock shoals which would have posed an initial danger until sufficiently covered over with water. On the other hand, we have noted the existence of countless geographical scars which bear out irrefutable proof there were indeed titanic forces at work before, during, and after the Flood. Therefore, it would seem the possible ramifications resulting from these forces would have to be preemptively engineered into the Ark's design in order to adequately protect it.

The Bible specifically predetermined the ship should be built 300 cubits long, 50 cubits wide and 30 cubits high. Translated into feet, this would be approximately 450 feet long, 75 feet wide and 45 feet high. The reason for the approximation is that no one really knows what God defined the cubit to be in the time of Noah. It is usually suspected that since Moses authored Genesis he would have utilized this measurement because he was the product of an Egyptian education, in which case a royal cubit would be about 18 inches. According to these specifications, the length-to-breadth ratio is 6:1, and what is interesting is that this ratio is the same used during the zenith of wooden ship building as well as for most of today's modern ships. Even the mammoth oil tankers produced today have a maximum ratio of 7:1. Of course, it took shipbuilding engineers a few thousand years of accumulated knowledge to finally realize the optimum cargo capacity as well as the structural and navigational benefits of these proportions.

What is interesting to ponder is whether Noah was acting on advice supplied by a technology which had already reached its zenith or did the Lord simply instruct him, knowing Noah would have no way of knowing about ratios and hull integrity. In either case, there are some challenges which must be overcome and since we know the Ark made a successful voyage, solutions will not be readily apparent because the technology seems to have disappeared with the ship. And yes, contrary to the numerous present-day expeditions currently underway to locate the Ark, this author firmly believes it will never be discovered for some very practical reasons which will be discussed a little later.

As stated before, the primary benefit of the 6:1 ratio is that it maximizes a vessel's structural integrity or its ability to stay in one piece in a liquid environment, while exposed to all kinds of weather. Of course, there are other factors which must be considered with regard to hull integrity, and one major stumbling block is the materials used in the construction. The logic is inescapable that different materials used in the building of a ship will provide both benefits as well as limitations which must be considered in order for it to successfully achieve its intended mission.

For all intents and purposes, the Ark was a disposable ship; it was built for only one voyage and its primary purpose was to protect its contents from harm's way. What happened to it after its mission was accomplished was of no particular interest to any of the concerned parties. So, with this in mind, we need to concentrate on the practicalities of the materials used, and a major challenge with respect to those materials is the length and width of the Ark, because the 450-foot length far exceeds the structural integrity limits of wood when placed in a fluid environment.

In the early 1900's, an American ship called the *Wyoming* was launched from Percy and Small shipyards located in Bath, Maine. She was considered a state-of-the-art design with regard to all that was known about wooden hull engineering. While the *Wyoming* was in the beginning stages of development, it was well understood by the engineers that the 329-foot length of the hull exceeded the structural limitations for wood, so for this reason she was fitted with 90 steel cross-braces to add strength to the framework as well as structural support for the wooden hull planking.

The extra efforts were to no avail; from the day she was launched, the constant flexing and twisting due to her length resulted in dislodging sections of the hull which required continuous maintenance and bilge extraction in order to hold back the leaking sea water. A number of witnesses noted on several occasions that they had observed her violently snake and hog while at sea. Snaking is a nautical term used to describe twisting from side to side at both the bow and stern ends while the middle or midship remains steady and level. Hogging describes the up or down movements of the bow and stern while the midship remains unmoved. These combined actions spell disaster for wooden planking because there is absolutely nothing which can keep the planks from separating away from the hull bracing and breaking apart.

The Wyoming was used for close-in hauls, generally in sight of land. At the slightest sign of an approaching storm, she had to immediately run for port, which made her inefficient and non-profitable as a commercial transport. The ship was believed to have foundered and broke up east of the Pollock Rip Lightship, taking all hands with her.<sup>24</sup>

The Wyoming provides us with a classic example of what was in store for the Ark unless there was some secret technology which strengthened the wood and kept it from bending and breaking when cut into long lengths. This superior technology would also have to take into account the unavoidable seams resulting from board ends coming together at the cut points. In smaller ships, strength was added by staggering these ends so no two board lengths would end in the same area of the hull. This also served to stiffen the hull and minimize the snaking and hogging action as it rolled between waves. In longer ships, the staggering of the board ends lost this stiffening feature because multiple end sections in each successive hull course would bend and twist independently, thereby loosening them to the point they would begin breaking away from the supporting hull braces.

The limitations of wood would become an even greater disadvantage for the Ark because of the ship's 450-foot length. The inordinately long courses of planking would flex in a harmonic fashion until the tensile strength of the individual wood grains fatigued, causing the wood fibers to separate and thus break apart at the cellular level. One way to over-

come this weakness would be to deploy some still undiscovered technology which would synthetically alter the wood fibers themselves, thereby making the lengths of timber more resilient to bending action. Another way to protect wood from flexing is to laminate it. It should be noted this lamination process would have to be at a level of sophistication which far surpasses any lamination process we employ today, since even multi-layered lamination sections would not be enough to prevent accelerated break-up when dealing with extreme lengths such as those represented by the Wyoming or the Ark. With these length limitations in mind, there are only two choices for us to consider. Either Noah was privy to some unknown assembly or manufacturing technologies which we are ignorant of to this day, or there were sophisticated water extraction systems deployed which were sufficient enough to overcome the inevitable influx of water due to leaks resulting from our understanding of the more traditional construction methods.

In addition to the above practicalities, it is important to mention another consideration with respect to design logistics. It stands to reason that if the wooden materials envelope was being pushed past its physical limits, then it is absolutely impossible for us to accept that a large opening was present in the middle of the ship's hull! We rarely see openings of any size in the sides of modern ships and it hardly seems worth mentioning that with few exceptions they were *never* designed into wooden ships which were subjected to continuous stress forces on the high seas.

Consider the fact that an eggshell is remarkably strong and can resist a considerable amount of pressure from the outside; this quickly changes, however, if even a tiny opening is punched through the egg's surface, thereby weakening the shell wall. In spite of this fact, we see countless artist renditions which depict a very large and spacious door which, of course, doubles as a gradual ramp allowing the regimented and orderly procession of marching animals to enter or exit the bowels of the ship.

There are a number of theologians who point out the fact that such an opening was present because it is specifically noted as such in Genesis 7:16 "*Then put three decks inside the boat – bottom, middle, and upper – and put a door in the side.*" Bible scholars also point out the door apparently was so massive the Lord had to be the one closing it because Noah was incapable

of doing so (Genesis 7:15). Perhaps, this is true but it still does not mean the door was necessarily located on the side or “tween-decks” of the ship (tween-decks is a nautical word contraction meaning between the decks). Furthermore, the Bible does not specify the size of the door nor the fact that the door had to be used to load animals. As the use of the word *side* is represented in verse 16, it can be argued with equal plausibility, that Noah had the option of putting the door in either the bottom *side*, the middle *side*, or the top *side* of the ship. While excluding the absurdity of a door located on the bottom side of the Ark, it should be just as ludicrous to consider the actual hull sides of the ship as a possible location for a door. Unless, of course, there were unexplainable engineering or synthetic material manufacturing technologies involved.

A much more logical explanation would be the inclusion of a topside deck hatch rather than a hull side opening. As far back as shipbuilding technologies can be traced, nautical engineering has always specified a deck hatch as the most efficient way to load and unload cargo because it does so without sacrificing the integrity of the ship’s hull. In Genesis 8:6, the Bible mentions the fact that Noah “opened a window” to release a raven, but in verse 13, when he was looking to see how dry the land was, it states that “Noah lifted back the cover to look.” Does this not sound more like Noah was throwing back the hatch cover so he could walk out on deck for a better perspective of his new surroundings? It is certainly a worthwhile interpretation to consider.

Of course a hatch located on the top deck would mean a three-story, man-made ramp would have to be constructed out of wood scaffolding or perhaps even rocks and dirt so the animals could walk up to the top deck and thus down into the hold where they could be properly housed. After all, human intervention would have to be involved with this critical process in order to assure weight distribution would remain balanced.

Perhaps what is meant by the fact that the Lord had to directly intervene by closing up the contents of the Ark is simply referring to the destruction of the ramp so other creatures, including humans, could not gain access through the hatch once it was battened down. Another consideration would be that, although hatch covers could be manipulated from the inside, it was often necessary for someone to further secure water-tightness from the outside with wooden wedges, layers of oil tarp, and hemp. Since Noah

and the animals were already inside the ship, it meant that perhaps this duty fell to the Lord who initially secured the hatch as well as uncovered it after the storm waters subsided.

While the logic of a top hatch instead of a side opening seems inescapable, it does present a challenge to the overall success of the mission because we are now left with the question of how the animals would exit the ship after the Flood waters subsided. The bulwarks of the Ark were at least 45 feet high, so leading animals up to the top deck would only be half the battle! There are two possible solutions to this comparatively small dilemma. The first is that Noah and his sons would have had to shimmy down the side of the ship and rebuild a new ramp from the ground up. This task would take quite some time and would be made more difficult because there were now only five or six workers, and there were no stands of seasoned timber to cut down, since the Flood had pretty much wiped this critical resource off the face of the planet! In fact, the only source of timber still effectively under their control was that used in the building of the Ark.

Also, time was working against Noah, since we will soon establish the fact that fodder storage on board the ship was extremely limited; therefore, it was imperative for the animals to disperse quickly so they could start feeding on the newly sprouting vegetation. While it is reasonable to expect a ramp could have been rebuilt using pieces of timber salvaged from the ship, the most logical and faster solution would be for Noah to simply cut an opening in the side of the ship, thereby minimizing the consumption of this now extremely precious resource. Remember, the Ark was a disposable ship, so its primary function after delivering its contents safely was to provide Noah with the necessities to rekindle the spark of life in an otherwise bleak and sterile landscape.

There is much that can be said about the shape of the Ark, but there is so little we can actually glean from the Biblical record, so it is difficult to comment much on this subject. We can reason that it had to be built for sturdiness and ruggedness and was not required to reach any particular destination save where the Lord directed it. This would mean the Ark did not have to purposely plow through rough seas to a specific location, so it had no need for a sleek cutting bow or a stern rudder. It was of little concern that the ship simply bobbed around aimlessly, since there

was no specific destination which a small crew of eight could have influenced. Steering the ship would have also required the addition of labor intensive steerage devices which encroached on valuable storage space. It would be reasonable to conclude the Ark might have been square-nosed, similar to a barge. This design would help steady the side-to-side rocking action as well as maximize the deck space housing the animals. This type of design also allowed for squaring the bulwarks instead of the more rounded design which was typically featured in hulls utilizing directional steering systems.

The classical drawback to this type of design would be the large flat fields of timber used for the bottom and sides of the ship which would magnify the constant bending and cambering action caused by hull displacement. More than ever, this would dictate the use of superior technologies in order to compensate for the inherent limitations of any raw materials used in the hull construction. Because of the sheer size of the Ark, it is safe to say that hull engineering utilized in today's barge-type vessels has not reached anywhere near a level of sophistication which would be capable of supporting the enormous size of the Ark, so many questions must remain unanswered as to how this ancient example of an obviously advanced type of technology could have been engineered. When this author reaches heaven, he plans to host several dinner parties for the specific purpose of listening to Noah's experiences while on board the Ark as well as questioning King Jesus and Noah so we all can at last better understand this incredible feat of engineering and construction.

During a fundraising campaign for the 1970 Search Foundation's expedition to Mt. Ararat, a curious call was received at the Foundation headquarters which eventually resulted in the introduction to an individual who claimed to have seen the Ark when he was a young child around the year 1902 and again in 1904. His name was George Hagopian, an Armenian who herded sheep and lived near the base of Ararat in the small town of Van. The 1970 expedition was destined for failure, but in the meantime there was considerable effort by the Search Foundation to validate Mr. Hagopian's story. This process included subjecting him to an extensive battery of Psychological Stress Evaluator (PSE) tests which he passed with flying colors. At this point, members of the Search Foundation began taking George's story seriously, so they ushered in Elfred Lee, a renowned illustrator, who proceeded to create an artist's conception



from Mr. Hagopian's recollections and detailed descriptions of what he saw during his sojourns to Ararat with his grandfather.<sup>25</sup>

Whether Mr. Hagopian's story is true or not is debatable, since it might be difficult for a young boy to accurately differentiate between what he actually saw as opposed to what he may have heard from a long tradition of dreamy fireside stories. The one thing that did capture this author's imagination, however, was the drawing of the Ark as Mr. Hagopian remembered it. The sketch was executed by the artist after carefully working with Mr. Hagopian in order to accurately depict what he remembered seeing. The finished artwork featured squared-off bow and stern sections and, most importantly, did not include any side openings which would have compromised hull integrity. In fact, Mr. Hagopian specifically stated that he was sure there were no openings he could remember seeing, with the exception of a center row of large shielded holes located on the top deck. These appeared to be windows according to George. The painting of the Ark definitely looks more like a flat sturdily built river barge, which makes absolute sense when one considers how such a platform would provide both ruggedness and stability in an otherwise turbulent stormy environment. Mr. Hagopian was also adamant about the fact that there were no visible nails used in the hull construction and that the wood seemed to be petrified, thus contributing to the debunking of a previous discovery of a piece of organic wood recovered by an earlier expedition claiming to have found the Ark.

The capacity logistics dictated by the dimensions of the Ark indicate a gross volume of about 1.5 million cubic feet, from which we can extrapolate approximately 50,000 square feet of deck space. This amounts to a little less than half the area found on board the Titanic, which weighed in at about 52,000 tons hull displacement. The Titanic's usable deck space was around 100,000 square feet but the additional area was due to the presence of 7 decks on the Titanic, as opposed to 3 decks on the Ark.

There is no written record of how many animals were stored in the Ark, so the question of whether it could have carried both single as well as multiple pairs of all the various species, along with sufficient food and water, is a matter of hot debate. There are several Biblical scholars and Christian professionals who hold that it is not at all impossible that the

Ark could have held examples of all known species. Of course, just what exactly do we *know* about the total number of species roaming the Earth around Noah's time? Do we include species which were alive then but are now extinct? And how do we know if all those extinctions have been accurately and faithfully recorded? In this same vein, there are many Bible critics who maintain it is preposterous to assume the diverse examples of today's birds, reptiles, insects, plants, and animals can be traced back to the inventory of a single ship (of course, these are the same individuals who will also try to convince us all life transmuted from a single source of primordial ooze).

There are a number of biologists who maintain the Ark could have contained "kinds" rather than species – for instance, one kind of male and female dog rather than individual species such as wolves, coyotes, foxes, et cetera. This is a reasonable theory, but even with an abbreviated manifest, we are still faced with an overwhelming number of daunting logistics and perplexing questions. For example, if we take mule deer on board, then do we also take elk, ibis, caribou, and bush bucks? What "kind" of animal is a camel, rhinoceros, ant eater, or giraffe? How does one store otters, beavers, seals or manatees, which are all air-breathing mammals but spend a great deal of time in the water (uh-oh – will we have to store whales and porpoises also)? When it is time to take examples of bovine kinds on board, must we decide between domesticated cows, or do we have to accept hardheaded, bad-tempered water buffaloes which are notoriously meaner than a junkyard dog? Of course, the Lord would probably be assisting with these kinds of decisions, but if this author were Noah, he would definitely vote for the former rather than the latter!

Many of these questions can be reasoned out, and it is most likely they would have been handed down by the Lord to Noah, but that is not the point; the real question is how Noah and his family would have been able to *learn* about and retain such a staggering amount of information? Would it be humanly possible for eight people to maintain the existence of all these animals while still seeing to their own personal needs as well as the general needs of the Ark? Besides becoming experts in nautical engineering and ship building, how did eight individuals suddenly become authorities in the fields of animal husbandry? Did they have to educate themselves on subtle insignificant details such as the premature

germination of seeds in a dark, damp, and humid environment? Can you imagine the length of time it would take eight university students today to suddenly become experts in multiple fields of biology, botany, ornithology, ichthyology, zoology, organic chemistry, inorganic chemistry, science, mathematics, physics, and oh, let us not forget a doctorate degree in human as well as veterinary medicine ...just in case some of the animals suddenly decide not to play nice!

There are many associated questions about feed and care alone which are absolutely mind-boggling. Just for the fun of it, let us explore a single example of food storage logistics for a moment. We know approximately 50,000 square feet of deck space was available, so let us examine the total feed storage requirements for one year for 300 animals whose nutritional requirements consist of a primary diet of hay. For the sake of simplicity, we will assume that, on average, each animal will require the same daily amount of hay as a domesticated horse, which is about 3 flakes per day (a flake is approximately one-tenth of a standard 2' x 2' x 4' bale). So, for 300 animals it will require 900 flakes or a total of 90 bales per day. For an entire year the total number of bales consumed by our "hay-burners" would be 32,850 (90 x 365). Assuming we can stack hay bales 4 high (because of a 8' ceiling), with each bale taking 8 square feet of deck space (2' x 4'), means that the total square feet of deck space which must be dedicated for hay storage is...drum roll, please...1,027 square feet ( $32,850/8 = 4106/4$ ) or approximately two percent of the total available deck space ( $1027/50,000 = .0205$ )!

Of course, there are variables which will allow us to reduce this footprint, such as a 10' ceiling, thus allowing for stacking bales 6 or 7 courses high. It is also a fact that many of these animals will require additional sources of nutrition such as fruits, vegetables, grains, et cetera, which consumes more precious deck space. And what about the fact that these animals would have extended food requirements after leaving the Ark because it must be remembered that vegetation most likely would not have adequately reestablished itself by the time the hatches opened. So, if we consider total deck space requirements for the 300 animals in our example, plus add in their food requirements as well as other variables, such as pen sizes, exercise corrals, et cetera, it is not a far stretch of the imagination to consume 15 or even 20 percent of useable deck space for this small number of animals!

Economies in deck space alone would require a considerable amount of bandwidth from our newly-ordained husbandry experts, but there are many other considerations which also demand an equal amount of attention. For instance, how did they maintain the different temperature, lighting, and ventilation requirements for the wide variety of specimens coming from so many different and diverse climates around the globe? Did they cater to the special diets of exotic specimens, and how did they keep meat eaters from preying on the other animals or, for that matter, each other? There is evidence in the Bible which indicates it is possible that predatory animals such as lions and wolves did not acquire a carnivorous diet until after the Flood, which means they would have been grazers instead of hunters. In his definitive book *Heaven*, Randy Alcorn correctly points out that the differences between Genesis 1:29-30 and Genesis 9:3 indicates it is possible neither people nor animals ate meat until after the Flood.<sup>26</sup>

This author finds this extremely interesting but unlikely. It would mandate the skeletal as well as the muscular structure and digestive systems would be radically altered for an animal to change from grazing to hunting prey. As an example, consider the differences in jaw structure and the arrangement of teeth between a cow and a wolf. A cow's teeth are designed to grind up and masticate grass, whereas a wolf's teeth are designed to tear flesh and crush bone. Think about this for a moment; how dramatic would the change be in the shape of a wolf's head in order to accommodate the switch between herbivorous to carnivorous preferences? The shape of a wolf's body would also undergo startling changes because as a grass eater it would not have required large lungs, strong muscular hind legs, and long front legs which enable the wolf to sprint long distances, leap into the air, and successfully bring down prey. Aside from God directly influencing wolves to begin attacking other animals, what would motivate a wolf to suddenly ignore the fields of plentiful grass and pursue a completely foreign diet which was extremely hard to catch? It goes without saying that the wolf's digestive and elimination systems would also have to change dramatically in order for it to begin consuming meat.

It is challenging to speculate on just how different animals would have looked if they had migrated from plant eaters to meat eaters. If we were suddenly transported back into Noah's world, it is quite possible

we would not even recognize animals such as wolves and lions based on their proposed vegetarian diet. This type of diet would have dramatically affected their body features, movement, and eating habits.

Changes in nature do occur on a consistent basis and an individual who was one of the first to document these phenomena was Charles Darwin. How many of us as professed Christians have actually read Darwin's controversial book, *The Origin of Species*? It might come as a surprise to discover there are a number of sound theories purposed by Darwin which are based on meticulous research and experience. One of the most interesting ideas, which he based on extensive field observations, addresses the gradual changes which occur as animals adapt to their local environments; this is called micro-evolution. For instance, Red foxes located in northern tundra areas shed their reddish summer coats in preference to white winter coats so they blend in with the surrounding environment. Iguanas living next to oceans develop webs between their claws so they can swim underwater and hunt marine life. Many of us have observed the differences between the paws of grizzly bears and polar bears. Both have long sharp claws but the pad span on polar bears is much wider thus allowing them to better distribute their weight on ice. Their paws also feature thick mats of hair between the toes which gives them added traction on slippery surfaces. Literally thousands of these creature adaptations were observed and studiously recorded by Darwin during his five year journey on board the HMS Beagle.

There is actually very little information dealing specifically with the common descent of man in *The Origin of Species* publication. Darwin was anxious to avoid that subject altogether when asked by Alfred R. Wallace, a theorist and colleague, to explore the subject in more depth. It was only after Wallace published a preemptive paper on Natural Selection that Darwin pulled out the stops, rushed his *The Origin of Species* towards completion, and then finalized his next publication called, *The Descent of Man, and Selection in Relation to Sex*. It was in this book that Darwin essentially authored a more detailed expose proposing the fact that all life transmuted from simple single-celled organisms.<sup>27</sup>

If all animals were herbivores before the Flood, then it begs the question; how did God maintain a natural check and balance system which would

prevent over-population and/or species survivability? Of course this question presumes the laws of nature were established and put in place as part of the creative process for all life, but this is an assumption that Young Earth Creationists do not agree with. YEC's believe the Creator intended all creation, especially on planet Earth, to have been created in a perfect state...that is without any death or decay. This idea is primarily based on the premise that all animals appear to have been created herbivorous. Also because God stated "*it was good,*" at least seven times in the first chapter of Genesis, it appears many of us associate the word "good" to mean "perfect," thus inferring that death and decay would not have been an integral part of the original creative plan...because death is *not* good.

In dealing with this concept it is important for us to understand that there *is* a pre-established order and balance in nature that exists now as well as being an integral part of the Creation event since the beginning of time. The plain and simple fact is the universe, the planet, as well as all life created by God, would be unable to exist or maintain itself if such a system were not in place! All creative processes are governed by laws, which were put into place by the Creator, *before* He started the creative process. The first thermodynamic law (cause and effect) and the second thermodynamic law (entropy) must, by design, impact all matter as well as time itself, within our universe. It is absolutely impossible to commence any action or do anything without initiating or affecting a corresponding result or reaction. It is also impossible that anything can remain in a perfect state because, according to the second thermodynamic law it will, of necessity, always be in a constant process of change or decay.<sup>28</sup>

In the molecular world, the decay of certain elements into other elements creates isotopic reactions which generate energy as well as new compounds. In the cosmos, the decay of a star creates a super nova which subsequently leaves a path of destruction but, at the same time, provides the universe with critical elements for the formation of new planets and star systems. When a carnivore consumes an herbivore it provides sustenance for itself, as well as maintains a balance critical to other animal populations. Just because God created what appears to us to be a ruthless and cruel system, does not necessarily mean that it is not "*good.*" The Creator could have introduced a perfect system; in fact we are told He will

eventually do just that after our present system “passes away” (Revelations 21:1) but that is not going to happen until after he dispatches Lucifer, along with the present Laws of Nature, at the end of the Millennial Reign.

Imagine a world where death and decay did not exist. What would Blue Whales look like without their distinctive layers of baleen, used to sift out krill from seawater? What would lions, tigers, and wolves look like if all they ate was grass? What about the accidental deaths of small insects which were eaten by a giraffe as it plucked tree leaves and swallowed them? What would Giant Anteaters eat; better yet, what would Adam have named this animal if he was unable to associate it with eating ants? What would spiders, snakes, and scorpions do with poisonous fangs? Why would we need flies, maggots, or worms if there was no decay? How could Radium convert to Lead, thus generating a new essential element, not to mention the energy by-product, if there was no decaying chemical transition? The most important challenge this concept raises is when did this life-altering change, from herbivorous to carnivorous take place, and where is it mentioned in the Bible? The fact is there is no place in the Bible which documents such a change. If a major upheaval such as this were to have occurred, it would have had a major impact on life as we know it; and there is no doubt that it would have been scripturally documented.

YEC’s assume that since the Creator established a perfect world, Adam and Eve were also created perfect and immortal. This is not the case however, because the Bible clearly indicates that Adam and Eve would only remain immortal *as long* as they had access to the fruit from the Tree of Life. In Genesis 3:22-23, the Lord begins by making a very astute observational statement; “Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil.” He then follows up with another observation which is immediately acted upon by what appears to be a committee decision: “And now, lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, *and live forever*” – therefore the Lord God sent him out of the garden.... Folks, this can only mean that Adam and Eve were originally created mortal and would possess immortality *only* as long as they had access to the elixir of life! However, this realization poses an even more challenging question; why would the Creator make man mortal yet determine that all other forms of life be immortal?

With all due respect, it is not this author's intention to denigrate those who accept and profess YEC doctrines, but at the same time we, as fellow Believers, cannot continue to appear foolish and unprepared when confronted by non-believers who are truly seeking to understand and embrace our Creator. God is not a trickster! He would never purposely falsify the time distance from one galaxy to the next, and He certainly would never create all life immortal while leaving species *Homo sapiens* mortal!

The laws of Nature have been with us since before the beginning of the Creation event. They may seem harsh and unforgiving, but they are, none the less good, consistent, and critical to the survival of all life, including our species. Many of you may remember the popular Disney movie *Never Cry Wolf*, which featured the true story of Farley Mowat, a scientist who was contracted by the Canadian government to document and photograph wolves in the act of slaughtering wild game, specifically caribou. The study, dubbed the Lupine Project, was conceived because wolves were suspected as the main culprits responsible for dwindling caribou herds. What Mr. Mowat discovered, however, was that the wolves were subsisting mainly on a diet of field mice and only culled out weak and diseased caribou as the herds migrated through the wolves' hunting grounds. This culling process was critical, since it assured only strong and healthy caribou survived to mate. The real culprit turned out to be the local Eskimos who were overhunting the wolves! The point is that wolves provided a natural balance to the caribou, which suddenly was unbalanced when the wolves were hunted to the point of extinction. The absence of wolves allowed sick and diseased caribou to propagate, thus further weakening the herd's ability to adapt and survive in their harsh environment.

Returning to the storage challenges facing Noah, it is well known that many species in today's world require hibernation or dormancy as a method of producing young. If this were a requirement of some animals which were present during Noah's time, it would mean special rooms would have to be built which remained cool and dark at all times during the voyage. The need for such rooms would place additional burdens on space allocations in the ship. Another challenge Noah might have had to address is a way to keep certain animals from inter-breeding, thereby weakening their ability to survive and propagate when they reached the New World.



Regrettably, we can reasonably assume mosquitoes and flies were brought on board, but how did they keep them fed while, at the same time, preventing the spread of diseases throughout the ship? Was there an active flower garden, so bees could obtain the pollens they needed to maintain the existence of their hive? How would Noah keep bears away from the irresistible lure of honey?

What about animals subsisting on diets of fish or other marine creatures? Did Noah have to know the position of schools of fish in order to replenish depleted inventories, and would such locations need to include both freshwater as well as saltwater varieties? If a supply of dried fish was prepared prior to the onset of the voyage, then who were the unlucky ones stuck with that job? And, while on this unpleasant subject, just how indescribably offensive would the smell of dried fish be while locked away in the confines of the ship? All these special needs required copious amounts of knowledge while also placing heavy demands on premium deck space aboard the Ark.

Most of us have the idea that the inside of the ship where the animals were housed looked and functioned like the inside of a farmer's barn with pens, lofts, and dry straw strewn about. This is most likely driven by the many classical artist conceptions which have been produced over the centuries. Given the technologies Noah and his family may have been familiar with, or at least exposed to, it seems logical that space-saving devices would have been incorporated throughout the ship to make life easier while, at the same time, amplifying efficiency and functionality. These devices would probably result in the housing and cargo areas appearing more like the inner workings of a Rube Goldberg puzzle, complete with trap doors, ropes, and pulley systems which combined in an overwhelming display of complex moving parts and a cacophony of sounds emanating from the intricate systems.

Of course, this would also mean the areas housing the animals would, of necessity, have to appear more like a clean, efficient animal laboratory or breeding center rather than a country barn. The scourge of the Black Plague, which decimated the European and Asian continents for hundreds of years, was the result of filthy living conditions combined with the close proximity of men and animals pressed together in confined

spaces. The Ark would have been no different in this respect, especially since disease-carrying specimens, such as rats, mice, and fleas, would have been part of its cargo manifest. It would have been imperative to establish and maintain laboratory-level cleanliness at all times. This mandate would of necessity drive all aspects of housing, caring for, and feeding this unimaginable plethora of creatures in order to minimize an epidemic outbreak. We cannot presume to even speculate how the results of all these efforts would appear visually, but suffice to say it would have been an impressive display of organization and efficiency to the casual observer.

As mentioned earlier, it hardly seems possible for eight people to manually care for all the various creature requirements as well as their personal needs and the demands of the ship. In fact, without God's help and advice it might have proved to be an overwhelming responsibility for Noah and his family to deal with such complexity. Therefore, it seems appropriate to consider time-saving devices and automated systems which would either economize on time or eliminate tasks altogether. We often marvel at the genius of Leonardo De Vince, but we can actually reach much further back into history and find even more remarkable ideas which were designed to lift, measure, transfer, and, in some cases, even manufacture via automated processes. More amazingly, many of these ancient eco-friendly systems were directly powered by levers, water, fire, sand, air movement, or variations in air or fluid temperature.

One of the earliest documented examples with respect to the creation of ingenious inventions must go to Archimedes of Syracuse, 287 BC to 212 BC. Archimedes was best known in the Greek world for his complex war machine and siege engine innovations, but of equal importance was his detailed explanation of leverage principles. Archimedes is often credited with the familiar explanation, "Give me a sure footing and I can lever the world!" One impressive example of Archimedes' genius for the use of the lever was the design and development of a submerged device capable of lifting fully manned war ships out of the water and destroying them within a few minutes.<sup>29</sup>

Another Greek mathematician, by the name of Heron of Alexandria (sometimes known as Hero), made his appearance in 62 AD. Heron's most important contribution was his work titled *Metrica*, a compendium

of three books containing geometric rules and formulas gathered from a variety of sources, some dating back to ancient Babylon. Heron was best known for his mathematical genius in the development of intricate machine systems which automatically opened and closed large heavy temple doors, dispensed measured amounts of wine, and even turned fountains and alter fires on and off without a person's awareness of how he/she may have interacted with the system. Heron once engineered and built an entire mechanized Greek play which featured moving ships, a large cast of animated figures, multiple backdrop changes, musical instruments which played familiar tunes, and changes in stage lighting which all retired back into a single small box after the play was finished. This was achieved by the ingenious use of measured lengths of string on an intricate array of spindles, pulleys, and levers driven by weight changes in cylinders of sand which in turn released small metal pellets or vessels of water. His two-volume *Pneumatica* describes a menagerie of mechanical toys, singing birds, puppets, coin operated dispensers, a fire engine, and his most famous invention, the *aeolipile*, which is the earliest known example of a steam-powered engine.<sup>30</sup>

There is another artist, astronomer, craftsman, inventor, and mechanical engineer, by the name of Al-Jazari, who made some very important contributions towards the development and understanding of mechanized systems during the Islamic Golden Age centered within the geographical area of Mesopotamia, around the 1100's. There is actually very little known about Al-Jazari the man except what he briefly wrote about himself in his *Book of Knowledge of Ingenious Mechanical Devices*, published in 1206. He is best remembered for inventing the crankshaft and the connecting rods which were both incorporated into machines meticulously detailed in his book. He is also credited with the invention of the escapement mechanism which controls the speed of wheel rotation.<sup>31</sup>

There is one thing all of the above examples had in common and that is the fact they all received much of their inspiration from earlier documented texts and scrolls which were considered ancient by their standards. In Al-Jazari's case, he admittedly drew conceptual machines and systems which he barely understood, since they were lifted from much earlier examples outlined in precious scrolls which were themselves copied from writings reaching even further back into antiquity.

If today we were to closely examine examples of workmanship from inventors such as Archimedes, Heron, or Al Jazari, we would probably not be impressed because many of their creative ideas are now fully understood and integrated within our daily lives. This is because we enjoy the benefit of hundreds or even thousands of years of documented technological advancements. However, if we were to be transported back into one of their time periods, it is doubtless most of us could even comprehend the value of such thinking much less actually produce a working prototype. These individuals all designed and created ingenious machines which made the daily lives of humans more productive and bearable, so if these ideas came from even earlier sources of inspiration, then it is reasonable to accept that some of these exceptional technologies could have also been deployed in the Ark.

While we have no record of the design specifics, it would be safe to speculate that if the Lord was particular about the height, width, and length of the ship, as well as the materials to be employed in its construction, then it is also reasonable to conclude that He would have provided Noah with technologies which would allow him to safely handle the refuse from both men and animals.

First and foremost, the Ark's design would require a watertight method of purging the waste as well as the toxic and explosive methane gases which would otherwise quickly overwhelm them. Furthermore, the system would have to operate automatically and on a continuous basis, since it would be impossible for eight people, in the middle of a storm, to muck out countless stalls in severely confined spaces where the buildup of these lethal gases alone would suffocate both man and beast in a matter of hours. It would not be difficult to conceive the rudimentary mechanics of a disposal system which would be driven by animal power in much the same way donkeys were employed to run grinding wheels in a gristmill. The challenge with this type of solution is that working animals would have greater nutritional needs, and the fact has already been established that deck space would have been severally limited with regard to food storage.

An immediate priority would be a consistent method of clearing away the refuse from the animal holding areas. One idea which quickly comes to mind is the design of holding pens featuring grate-like floors strong

enough to support the weight of the animal yet allowing urine and feces to fall through into a channeled water collection system, which would continuously flush to the main holding tanks located in the ship's bilge. These water channels could be composed of a series of baffled air spaces, located between each deck as well as behind the bulkheads, thus allowing the water and refuse to travel downwards, via gravity or from the natural motion of the ship, as it rocked back and forth and from side to side on the waves. Once the black water reached the holding tanks, an automatic lever-driven system would purge the holding tanks with fresh sea water, thus flushing its contents out to sea through one-way valves located at the other end.

Even with a system for the disposal of refuse, a very real ongoing problem would be the need for air handling systems which could purge stale air and gases to the outside while providing a steady source of fresh air throughout the ship. This could not be accomplished with simple window openings, since continually surging waters would flood in and scuttle the ship. It is reasonable to expect that ventilation could be handled similarly to the systems used on modern day ships with a series of one-way vents which close against incoming water while opening to allow internal air to escape. Air replacement is handled in modern ships with electric pumps, but a similar system could have been deployed throughout the Ark using animal power or counter-weighted air valves which utilized the rocking motion of the ship to suck in fresh air while flushing stale air through one-way pressure flaps leading to the outside.

The issues regarding nautical shipbuilding, the husbandry knowledge base required to ensure the propagation of the animal species (or kinds), or even the technical automations which made life bearable while on board the Ark all pale into insignificance when we contemplate the source of power which had to be an integral part of the Ark's design. The mindset that Antediluvians were technically inferior to today's "superior intellect" only serves to further hobble our imagination when it comes to addressing this important subject.

Perhaps a good place to begin would be to itemize what we do know. We know the Ark had at least three decks and only the topmost deck was equipped with windows. From our experience today, we realize windows alone could not be a dependable source of light for the Ark because we

know from the Bible it was constantly raining for at least the first few months. In any case, we also know windows could not provide light to the lower decks, so we are left with the question of how Noah and his family managed to see anything at all while working in these areas of the ship. We have also learned the diverse kinds of animals which may have been on board the Ark had different requirements with regard to light. Some required very little light because of hibernation or hibernation, but others required not only light but direct sunlight, since the sun also provides energy in the form of vitamins and photosynthetic processes critical to the systems of many plants and animals.

To further complicate this issue, we not only have to define the diverse lighting requirements of the Ark, we also have to address the source of power needed to produce the light! The most logical type of energy-producing technologies familiar to us which could have also been deployed in the Ark would have to originate from a source such as stored power – in other words, a battery. We have deduced the possibility that Antediluvians may have possessed the necessary knowledge for technologies associated with petroleum-based fuels and perhaps even nuclear-based energy, but both of these power sources also produce considerable waste product which we struggle to eliminate and/or dispose of even today.

Clean efficient energy in the form of stored battery power seems to be the most logical method of managing the onboard systems of the Ark. Of course, stored power needs to be recharged every once in a while, which leaves us with yet another challenge to consider in order to complete the energy cycle. There is also the consideration that Antediluvians may have been privy to another source of power of which we, as yet, are unaware. If this is the case, then it would be counterproductive and far beyond the capabilities of this author to spend time contemplating those tantalizing unknowns.

There are three sources of information we can refer to with respect to the availability of light and power onboard the Ark. The first comes from the Bible, the second comes from archaeological discoveries, and the third was a possible refining process derived from natural resources other than petroleum. For unexplained reasons, it seems the Bible refers to two different sources of light when the words are translated from original Hebrew texts. The first reference is found in Genesis 8:6 when the word “window” is used to describe the opening where Noah released the birds in anticipation

of finding dry land. In this case, the Hebrew word *chalon* is used to literally describe the window opening allowing sunlight to enter. As we read further in the Old Testament, we find numerous other uses of the word “window”, but in all these cases the Hebrew word used is *tsobar*, which has an entirely different meaning. The word *tsobar* refers to a window of brightness, or brilliant light, like the light of a noonday sun. Its associated cognitive uses refer to something that sparkles, glitters, or shines.<sup>32</sup>

Traditionally schooled Jewish scholars identify *tsobar* to be a light which originated from a shining crystal or enormous pearl thought to have been deployed between the decks of the Ark by Noah. The teachings go on to describe the device as having some kind of mysterious renewable power source contained within its mechanism, so it was capable of maintaining its brilliance for the duration of the mission. We also find the use of the word *tsobar* was not limited to Noah’s Ark or the Bible because it was used again in an ancient Jewish manuscript generated around 1000 BC and later translated by the famous Egyptologist, Sir Wallis Budge. The title of the manuscript was *The Kebra Nagast-The Queen of Sheba and Her Only Son Manyelek*. Translated within the manuscript, it specifically states the following; “Now the house of Solomon the King was illuminated as by day, for in his wisdom he had made shining pearls which were like the sun, the moon, and the stars positioned in the roof of his house.”<sup>33</sup>

Another more secular reference comes to us from a fragment of the Sumerian Epic of Gilgamesh text which describes the preparation of King Ziusudra’s “huge boat” into which the hero Utu brought the “rays of the sun” for the purpose of providing it with a source of artificial light. Thanks to a more recent discovery, we are able to point to actual physical evidence that the knowledge of electricity may have been passed on from Antediluvian antiquity in the form of an ingenious battery.

In 1938, Dr. Wilhelm König, a German archeologist, was exploring the basements and storage rooms located in the Baghdad Museum when he stumbled across a discovery which would eventually create a storm of controversy with regard to what was known about ancient technologies. The discovery was a box full of clay storage pots, excavated from a local ruin located in the suburbs of Baghdad. Dr. König immediately recognized that there was something unusual about these clay pots because the

pots were noticeably identical to each other, and all contained a hollow cylinder of copper approximately 5” high and 1.5” in diameter. The bottoms and tops of the pots were sealed with discs of bitumen which also held a small iron rod suspended from the top of each pot. The iron rods all showed evidence of corrosion from some type of acid solution which had long since evaporated.

Dr. König knew the arrangement of copper, acid, and metal could be none other than an ancient electric battery cell. Confirmation of this fact came after World War II when two Americans, William Ley and Willard Gray, produced an exact model of the clay pot cells which produced between 1.5 to 2 volts of electricity after acetic, citric, or copper sulfate acid solutions were added to the pots.

Additional clay pots were discovered in and around Baghdad, some of which included specially engineered parts which allowed the independent cells to be linked together in order to produce a stronger voltage. These Baghdad Batteries, as they became known, all date from the Parthian period of Persian occupation from 650 BC to 250 BC. However, electroplated objects which also indicate the use of some form of electrical power have been unearthed in Babylonian ruins dating as far back as 2,000 BC; thus, it would appear the Persians and later the Baghdad craftsmen inherited their battery technologies from ancient civilizations which were at one time or another located in the Euphrates Valley and Middle East.<sup>34</sup>

The Bagdad battery only discusses a possible source of power, but we still have to address the source of light. While the *tsobar* represents an example which supplied both power as well as a light source, we can go no further with this example because we cannot examine verifiable artifacts which include this unexplainable technology. On the other hand, it does make for giddy contemplation concerning the vast fortunes which could be made if such a technology were to suddenly be made available to today’s energy-hungry world.

Throughout recorded history, one is able to find a number of unexplained examples of lighted globes which were witnessed in several diverse places around the planet. Many times these phenomena were observed and recorded by individuals who could barely describe what they were



seeing or perhaps were receiving the information secondhand. One such example was recorded by a writer named Barco Cenenera, who documented a pioneering conquistador's discovery of Granmoxo, located near the mountaintop source of the Paraguay River in the year 1601. He wrote, "On the summit of a 7.75-meter pillar was a great moon which illuminated all the lake, dispelling darkness."<sup>35</sup> We can also cite another dramatic example which occurred while the tomb of Pallas was being opened in the early 1400's. To the amazement of all who were involved in the discovery, it was found to be lighted by a lantern which evidently had continuously illuminated the room for more than 2,000 years.<sup>36</sup> Unfortunately, there is no other documentation as to what technology was behind the light source which causes many to be skeptical as to the validity of this discovery.

Before the advent of electric lighting in the 1890's, our primary source of light was derived from candles, torches, oil lamps, and lanterns. All these light producing devices had one thing in common; they left visible soot deposits which discolored walls and ceilings, especially when they were used in small confined spaces over a prolonged period of time. Since early archaeological explorers were sensitive to this fact, it was a noteworthy phenomenon when no trace of smoke or soot was found inside many of the pyramids or the vast underground labyrinths discovered in the Valley of the Kings. How the Egyptians were able to light their tombs remains a re-occurring mystery.

There are some who believe the workmen used mirrors arrayed in such a way as to direct sunlight into the various passageways and rooms, but many of these labyrinths are simply too complex for a system of mirrors to have delivered sufficient light. Archaeologists and visitors to these ancient edifices often marvel over the fact that their immense sizes as well as materials used during their construction would normally translate to enormous spans of time in order to complete such building programs. Yet, inscriptions located within or in the vicinity of these sites indicate they were constructed remarkably quickly. The use of arrayed mirrors means the builders would be even further restricted by daytime only work schedules, which further complicates the mysteries associated with their unusually accelerated construction timetables.

A discovery by the notable nineteenth-century French archaeologist Auguste Mariette could possibly shed some light (pun intended) on this mystery. While excavating in the area of the Sphinx on the plains of Giza, Mariette unearthed some artifacts at a depth of approximately 60 feet. In the *Grand Dictionnaire Universel du 19<sup>th</sup> Siècle*, he described the artifacts as “pieces of gold jewelry whose thinness and lightness make one believe they had been produced by electroplating, an industrial technique which Mariette’s generation had only been using for two or three years.” As with the Baghdad Batteries, electroplating requires a source of electricity, so this can only mean that the Egyptians may have also had a method of illuminating their tombs with electrically generated sources of light.

What all this indicates is that ancient technologies may have existed which were capable of producing artificial lighting as well as power generation and storage of electrical energy. If this knowledge was documented within the temples and archives of ancient civilizations, it should not surprise us this technology could have been handed down by the Antediluvians through the survivors of the Flood.

This brings us to the last but not least possibility for a source of light that could have been used to illuminate various areas of the ship as it became necessary. The fact that this solution might have evolved from a natural wonder provided by the Creator Himself makes it even more expedient to consider its straight-forward, yet unique practicalities. The light source we are referring to is what scientists call bioluminescence; as it is referred to when it is produced naturally in nature. If it is artificially produced in a laboratory setting it is called chemiluminescence. We commonly associate this phenomenon by the little creatures that produce it and we call them fireflies, or lightning bugs. Fireflies come from the family of *Lampyridae*, and produce a light that contains no infrared or ultraviolet frequencies. This “cold light” is produced in the lower abdomen of the insect when the enzyme luciferase acts on luciferin, and is then mixed in the presence of magnesium ions, hydrogen phosphate, and oxygen.

The discovery of chemiluminescence was pioneered by Doctor Edwin Chandross when he began contemplating the science behind the natural phenomenon generated by fireflies. In 1959 Dr. Chandross joined Bell

Labs and was able to continue testing his theories as to how this light could be reproduced artificially. He discovered that hydrogen peroxide was an ideal base element which reacted to a volatile derivative of oxalic acid. Dr. Chandross conducted a few additional refining tests and eventually arrived at the correct combination of ingredients. This remarkable achievement was accomplished by Dr. Chandross in a single afternoon yet it radically changed the ways we are now able to dispel the darkness in our world today. It is important for us to remember that Antediluvians may have also possessed the capabilities necessary to artificially reproduce chemiluminescence and perhaps even make improvements which may have increased brightness as well as extend the length of time it remained a viable source of light.

There is one area onboard the Ark which most likely required the presence of fire, namely the food preparation galley. It is probably safe to conclude that the human occupants were not seasoned mariners and thus fell to violent bouts of seasickness during the initial journey. Eventually, however, their need for sustenance would require a source of heat for cooking purposes. Perhaps this need did not arise until after the worst of the storm had subsided and nature was re-establishing its equilibrium, possibly a month or so. After things settled down, a conventional oil stove most likely could have been used safely in a specially protected area of the ship where the fire hazard could be minimized. On the other hand, it is interesting to speculate on food preparation technologies incorporating the use of captured and stored methane gas which might have fed burners controlled by a system of controls and levers.

Of course, our speculations as to the engineering technologies employed in the Ark's design, the yet-to-be discovered construction methods which insured its hull integrity despite its size, or the workings of its internal mechanization and light sources are all based on generous doses of wild imaginings due to severally limited sources of recorded documentation or scientifically reliable data. The fact is we will never fully understand the marvelous workmanship behind this endeavor until we can meet face to face with both its architect and builder in order to better appreciate the countless challenges they had to overcome. One thing is for sure; after spending considerable time contemplating some of the minutia required in order to insure the success of the Ark's mission, this author has come

away with a much deeper appreciation for the tremendous challenges faced and subsequent sacrifices made by Noah and his family to save mankind from total extinction.

What is truly humbling is the fact that had it not been for Noah's close personal relationship with the Lord, he would have been unable to successfully accomplish the continuance of the human species because human effort alone would not have been enough in the face of such a daunting task. It is just as obvious the Lord was absolutely frustrated with mankind, but also still loved His creation and honored Noah to such an extent that He entrusted the very seed of humanity itself to his capabilities as a knowledgeable and willing partner. Thus, it was this unique team, composed of a simple human and a Divine Creator, which ultimately succeeded in this challenging endeavor to thwart Lucifer's' battle plan while simultaneously saving man from himself.

Christ died so we might receive the gift of eternal life, which makes Him the undisputed hero number one in the sight of this author's eyes. That being said, it should also occur to us that Noah's contribution was in some ways equally as important, since he is perhaps the less celebrated hero who helped save the human race by leading the charge to rescue its seed, thereby ensuring the soon to be recorded prophesy that Jesus Christ our Creator and Savior would be born to us as a human being.

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

## ARKEOLOGY

- <sup>1</sup> [www.theguardian.com/.../babylonian-tablet-noah-ark-constructed-british-museum](http://www.theguardian.com/.../babylonian-tablet-noah-ark-constructed-british-museum).
- <sup>2</sup> Strong's Concordance: <http://biblehub.com/hebrew/3724.htm> (*Arabic masculine*).
- <sup>3</sup> Hyne, Norman J. *Nontechnical Guide to Petroleum Geology, Exploration, Drilling, and Production*. PennWell Corporation. 2001.  
  
Speight, James G.; Dekker, Marcel: *How Petroleum is Produced: The Chemistry and Technology of Petroleum*. 1999.
- <sup>4</sup> Theobaric Oil Model <http://www.answersingenesis.org/articles/arj/v1/n1/origin-of-oil>:
- <sup>5</sup> Geocentric model: Lawson, Russell M. (2004). *Science in the Ancient World: An Encyclopedia*. ABC-CLIO.
- <sup>6</sup> Heliocentric model: Thurston, Hugh (1994). *Early Astronomy*. Springer-Verlag, New York.  
  
Linton, Christopher M. *From Eudoxus to Einstein—A History of Mathematical Astronomy*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. 2004.
- <sup>7</sup> Galilei Galileo, <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/>
- <sup>8</sup> Finocchiaro, Maurice A. *Book Review—The Person of the Millennium: The Unique Impact of Galileo on World History*. *The Historian* 69 (3): 601–602. 2007.  
  
Galilei, Galileo. *Dialogue Concerning the Two Chief World System*. Translated by Stillman Drake. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press. 1953 [1632].
- <sup>9</sup> *Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation*: Google E-book, [http://books.google.com/books/about/Vestiges\\_of\\_the\\_natural\\_history\\_of\\_creat.html?pid=gJANAAAAAYAAJ](http://books.google.com/books/about/Vestiges_of_the_natural_history_of_creat.html?pid=gJANAAAAAYAAJ)  
  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History\\_of\\_the\\_creation%E2%80%93evolution\\_controversy](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_the_creation%E2%80%93evolution_controversy)
- <sup>10</sup> The Butler Act: <http://law2.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/scopes/tenstat.htm>
- <sup>11</sup> *Epperson vs. Arkansas*: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Epperson\\_v.\\_Arkansas](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Epperson_v._Arkansas)
- <sup>12</sup> McCready Price, George *The New Geology: A Textbook for Colleges, Normal Schools, and Training Schools; and for the General Reader*. Pacific Press Publishing Association, 1923.  
  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George\\_McCready\\_Price#Bibliography](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_McCready_Price#Bibliography)
- <sup>13</sup> Whitcomb, John C. and Morris, Henry M. *The Genesis Flood*. Presbyterian & Reformed Publishing, 1961

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

- <sup>14</sup> Gallup Poll: <http://www.gallup.com/poll/155003/hold-creationist-view-human-origins.aspx>.  
<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Creationism>
- <sup>15</sup> Lifespan of the Sun: <http://curious.astro.cornell.edu/question.php?number=389>  
<http://www.universetoday.com/18847/life-of-the-sun/>
- <sup>16</sup> Albert Einstein: <http://einstein.biz/>  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Albert\\_Einstein](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Albert_Einstein)  
Parker, Barry. *Einstein's Brainchild: Relativity Made Relatively Easy!* Prometheus Books. Illustrated by Lori Scoffield-Beer. A review of Einstein's career and accomplishments, written for the lay public. 2000.
- <sup>17</sup> Friedmann, Daniel. *The Genesis Code*: Inspired Books; 2<sup>nd</sup> edition. December 12, 2012.
- <sup>18</sup> Planetary Accretion: [http://www.nasa.gov/mission\\_pages/station/research/experiments/215.html](http://www.nasa.gov/mission_pages/station/research/experiments/215.html)
- <sup>19</sup> Kious, W.J.; Tilling, R.I. *Continental Drift: Historical perspective, This Dynamic Earth: the Story of Plate Tectonics* (Online ed.), U.S. Geological Survey, (February 2001) [1996].  
[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Continental\\_drift](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Continental_drift)
- <sup>20</sup> de Solla Price, Derek. *Gears from the Greeks. The Antikythera Mechanism: A Calendar Computer from ca. 80 B. C.* Transactions of the American Philosophical Society, New Ser., Vol. 64, No. 7. pp. 1–70. 1974.
- <sup>21</sup> King, L. W. *Enûma Eliš: The Seven Tablets of Creation*: London reprint king-of-heroes.co.uk (1902); 1999
- <sup>22</sup> <http://www.intelligentdesign.org/>
- <sup>23</sup> Dawkins, Richard: <http://richarddawkinsfoundation.org/>  
Dawkins, Richard. *The God Delusion*. Houghton Mifflin Harcourt, 2008,
- <sup>24</sup> Nash, John F. *Non-Cooperative Games*, PhD Thesis, Princeton University. May 1950.  
Vincent, Thomas, *Evolutionary Game Theory, Natural Selection, and Darwinian Dynamics*: Cambridge University Press, p.72-87, 2005
- <sup>25</sup> The Wyoming: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wyoming\\_\(schooner\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wyoming_(schooner)).
- <sup>26</sup> Noorbergen, Rene. *George Hagopian encounter: Secrets of the Lost Races*. Bk. 2. Norcom edition. "Treasures of the Lost Races" Bk. 3. 1977, 1993.
- <sup>27</sup> Alcorn, Randy *Heaven*: Tyndal House Publishers, Inc. 2004,

## ARKEOLOGY

- <sup>28</sup> Darwin on Human Evolution: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Descent\\_of\\_Man,\\_and\\_Selection\\_in\\_Relation\\_to\\_Sex](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Descent_of_Man,_and_Selection_in_Relation_to_Sex)
- <sup>29</sup> Thermodynamic Laws: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laws\\_of\\_thermodynamics](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laws_of_thermodynamics)
- <sup>30</sup> Archimedes: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Archimedes>
- <sup>31</sup> Heron of Alexandria: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hero\\_of\\_Alexandria](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hero_of_Alexandria)
- <sup>32</sup> Al-Jazari: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Al-Jazari>
- <sup>33</sup> Challon and Tsohar: <http://www.indyfan.com/ark/tsohar.html>
- <sup>34</sup> Nagast, Kebra. *The Kebra Nagast-The Queen of Sheba and Her Only Son Menyelek*, Research Associates School Times Publications. July 2000.  
  
[http://www.yorku.ca/inpar/kebra\\_budge.pdf](http://www.yorku.ca/inpar/kebra_budge.pdf) (see pg. 30)
- <sup>35</sup> Bagdad Battery: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Baghdad\\_Battery](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Baghdad_Battery)
- <sup>36</sup> Noorbergen, Rene. *Barco Cenenera observation: Secrets of the Lost Races*. Bk. 2. Norcom edition (1993) (quoted) (1977)
- <sup>37</sup> Hall, Manly P. *Lighted Tomb of Pallas: The Secret Teachings of All Ages*, (see pg. 135) 2010.



## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

❖  
**THE NEW WORLD**  
❖

It seems odd, but it appears there are very few Flood story treatments exploring the numerous challenges Noah and his family might have encountered after the hatches opened on their new world. Perhaps it is because we are not privy to any documentation that could have shed light regarding the initial reactions of the Ark survivors as they stared transfixed on their new surroundings. The Bible gives us precious few details about how this lonely little group of humans started to go about the processes of rebuilding the foundation of species *Homo sapiens* in a brand new sterilized environment. What thoughts passed through their minds as they cast their eyes out on the torn and disheveled landscape, which must have looked more like the bottom of a drained lake bed instead of the familiar lush green vistas they were probably used to seeing?

Perhaps we could stand in Noah's shoes for a moment and picture ourselves falling asleep somewhere in Hawaii then waking up the next morning to discover we have somehow been transported to a mountain top in the middle of the Siberian tundra! Nothing we are familiar with is the same; there are hills, valleys, and mountain peaks which are completely foreign to us. The sun looks more distant and somehow seems to have shifted its position in the sky. The barren landscape reveals precious little to survive on, be it plant or animal. There are strong cold winds flecked with ice instead of warm tropical breezes. Even the air we are breathing seems different and more hostile towards survival.

After the initial emotions of shock and panic begin to subside, perhaps the first practical thoughts racing through our consciousness would be how we should begin dealing with the basic needs of water, food, shelter, and warmth. Unfortunately, the mental plans we start making are rudely interrupted by the immediate need for warmer clothing because it is extremely cold now and the flimsy tropical garments we are

wearing obviously will not be adequate to protect us from this completely strange and alien environment. Just when we have resolved ourselves to start meeting the challenges of somehow eking out an existence in this otherwise threatening landscape, we hesitate once again because we suddenly remember that seven other people and a whole bunch of animals are completely dependent upon us for their ultimate survival!

Many of us have been blessed...or cursed, as the case may be, with a strong sense of adventure, and perhaps we remember our childhood feelings of excitement and anticipation as we read literary treasures like the *Adventures of Robinson Crusoe*. We marveled at the ingenuity our hero displayed as he set about harnessing his new surroundings by constructing innovative contraptions and tree-bound shelters, transforming his deserted island into a virtual paradise to which many of us secretly longed to escape.

The stark reality is that Noah and his family were faced with something much more challenging than survival on a tropical island rich in vegetation with lots of wild game as well as bountiful supplies of fresh water and seas containing edible marine life. What likely met Noah's initial gaze was mostly featureless and soggy land masses covered with enormous heaps of dead and decaying vegetation which would also, of course, be entangled with the contorted, rotting corpses of countless animal and human remains. Occasionally, a small young plant or tree sapling might be spotted stubbornly trying to force its way up through the muddy ooze, but otherwise there would be precious little signs of life to break the monotonous gray landscape...decidedly not a very inspiring sight, made much worse by the cacophony of indescribable smells which would most certainly cause most of us to turn around and make a beeline back inside the relative security of the Ark!

The Bible does give us indications that there were some planetary changes in the New World environment which meant things were going to be different now. To begin with, a new meteorological weather cycle had replaced the former subsurface watering system, according to Genesis 8:21-22. Most of us focus on the covenant God was establishing with man, but these verses also inform us that after Noah sacrificed some approved animals to express his gratitude for protection during the ordeal,

God returned the gesture by introducing the rainbow along with four distinct seasonal weather patterns. Scientifically speaking, the newly announced rainbow meant there were now concentrated amounts of moisture and rain clouds forming in the atmosphere. Also, these strange white puffy things which no one had ever seen before now delighted onlookers with a moisture saturated backdrop which accentuated lensing effects as sunlight passed through droplets of rain, thus dividing the light into a component spectrum of beautiful colors. The introduction of distinct seasonal changes also indicated that the Earth was now in a wobbling orbit, resulting in periods of hot and cold in specific regions of the planet as it tilted closer or further away from the life-giving warmth of the sun.

Since the Earth was now on its newly skewed course, it is also likely the positions of stars as well as familiar Antediluvian constellations might now be completely unrecognizable to Noah and his family. Perhaps this had more of a profound effect than we might first imagine because most of us may recall the repetitive consistency behind many ancient writings and archaeological monuments which seem to be obsessed with tracking the positions and movements of stars. The Greeks habitually honored their heroes by naming star constellations after them; this propensity likely originated from handed down documents or stories that, before the Greeks' time, were both mathematically functional and navigationally practical to a race of people who had long since passed into history. It is possible the Greeks inadvertently intertwined this ancient Antediluvian practicality together with their own mythology because it was the only way this information could have made any sense!

The Egyptians were another notable civilization attaching great significance to the heavens and went so far as to line up the placement of their monuments to harmonize with the geometry of particular star alignments. Consider for a moment if such a positional constellation change were to occur in the heavens today. It would drastically impact our society until new adjustments and calculations could be reestablished, so we could once again identify relative position, measure distance and time, or safely navigate our planet regardless of whether it was by air, land, or sea.

There is little doubt that one of the most pressing tasks on a long list of critical priorities, for Noah and his family, was to get off the mountain as

quickly as possible. Mt. Ararat has an elevation just under 17,000 feet, so even if the Ark were not perched on its very summit, it is highly probable the air was thin, cold, and extremely inhospitable to most of the creatures huddling and shivering inside the bowels of the ship. Even today, the entire geographical region is marginally habitable and thinly populated because of its desolate landscape and meager offerings of sustainable vegetation. The mountain itself is blanketed by year-round glaciers which expand or recede in concert with global warming and cooling cycles.

It is not hard to imagine the additional hardships imposed due to the complete absence of even sparse vegetation as a result of muddy sediments left behind by receding waters which coated the landscape in a dull gray blanket. Many artistic renderings show Noah and his family leaving the Ark surrounded by a lush green pastoral background while wearing the familiar loose robe style dress which seems to dominate most religious artwork. The practical challenge to this is that the weather was, meteorologically speaking, ugly, so any such clothing brought from the old world would be absolutely useless against the harsh elements imposed by their present elevated position on or near the summit of a mountain.

Their new modified dress would have required the heavy application of animal skins for both clothing and footwear, thus making them appear more like Eskimos than residents from the tropical climates they had formerly dressed for. Even today, individuals in and around the Ararat area dress in multiple layers of thick warm clothing and oversized head covers which serve to block out the harsh weather conditions that usually dominate the area. Certainly the Lord would have forewarned Noah about these upcoming extreme conditions and would have seen to it they should lay in a generous supply of furs, hides, awls, sewing needles, and catgut strips so the woman folk might be able to manufacture more suitable outfits during the long and no doubt tedious journey.

It is difficult to say whether Ararat, the mountain, was present before the Flood or if it was created as a result of accelerated tectonic shifts precipitated during the opening phases of the disaster. The fact remains that in the beginning it was both risky and dangerous to venture out into this harsh and alien environment.

Many of us may remember that soon after Mount St. Helens erupted in 1987, Washington State scientists were demanding an immediate

quarantine around the mountain and surrounding areas, especially in the vicinity of the blast field situated on the northeast side. This was because the eruption had discharged approximately 1 cubic mile of dirt and debris across the landscape. The event was drawing scientists, geologists, researchers, and even businessmen in unprecedented numbers from all over the world, so the urgency behind the quarantine was due to the threat to visitors suddenly becoming victims of a phenomena caused by the pyroclastic flows (dense superheated clouds of dirt, loose rocks, and hot gases traveling in excess of 200 mph).

The heavy dust clouds plowed over vegetation, creating loose pockets of debris, which were then covered over by thin layers of dirt and ash. These deadfalls, as they were appropriately nicknamed, looked completely harmless on the surface, but if a person ventured out onto the thin cover layer, it would immediately give way, exposing the victim to a terrifying fall into a field of sharp protruding branches, unstable rocks, and clouds of choking dust. Few could survive such a fall, but to make matters worse, it was impossible to rescue any potential survivors because surface teams would be subjected to the same risks from other deadfalls. It was also noted that the downward prop blasts caused by the helicopter blades would churn up so much dust it would be impractical to lower a rescuer to the victim's location in any case.<sup>1</sup>

Logging companies were highly motivated to come up with a solution to overcome these challenges because there were literally billions of board feet locked in the freshly fallen timber which could be harvested if a method were forthcoming to overcome the dangers. The opportunity passed, the timber rotted where it fell and, after a few years, most of the deadfalls collapsed naturally, thus allowing people to safely venture into the area once again.

It is conceivable that Noah and his family would have faced the likelihood of encountering deadfalls. While the presence of water may have compacted layers of soil differently, the enormous piles of organic matter pushed into heaps and covered over by mud would likely have caused the same type of phenomena. On the other hand, deadfalls would have represented just one of many unexpected dangers. Consider for a moment the very real threat of bacterial contamination in bodies of stagnate water

where organic decomposition was present; it would make the simple act of getting a drink of water fraught with danger! Nature's garbage disposals in the form of flies, grubs, worms, maggots, buzzards, and scavenging mammals had not had sufficient time to reestablish themselves, thus increasing the potential for lethal bacterial strains to colonize and flourish.

Even today, we have witnessed substantially more victims perishing from disaster-induced disease and contamination than were ever dispatched as a direct result of the catastrophe itself. This is especially true in cases where floodwaters were involved. Of course, we know the Lord would have kept close watch over His precious seed stock; however, it is also probable there would be many Flood-induced hazards which would understandably slow Noah's process of exploring this once familiar but now barren and lifeless landscape.

The harsh weather conditions faced on the mountain would have necessitated the immediate deployment of fact-gathering patrols looking for a safe route leading down to the more temperate regions below. Once a base camp could be established, the next challenge would be to release the animals to the outside world; there are two practical ways this task might be accomplished. Because we have already established the practicality of deck hatches over an opening in the side of the ship, we now have to come to grips with the fact that a three-story ramp would need to be constructed in order to get the animals up on deck and down off the Ark. Since there was not an abundance of timber available, especially on top of a mountain, we are forced to come up with something a little more straightforward, such as cutting a hole in the side of the ship.

This would most certainly be destructive to the ship, but again it is important for us to remember the Ark was a disposable vessel, so perhaps this might not be as daunting a task as we might think. In fact, it is highly probable the original design of the Ark could have incorporated a specially engineered area in the hull bracing where a future opening could be made quickly and efficiently, thus allowing man and beast to safely exit the ship.

While on the subject of the Ark, it is probably a good time to address one other practicality with regard to the ship's function. At one time or

another, most of us have heard, seen, or read about various expeditions to Mt. Ararat with the expectation that sooner or later the discovery of this legendary vessel would provide immutable proof and thus finally put to rest the centuries-old controversy between Christians and Atheists about whether or not God really exists. Unfortunately, and in spite of the tremendous amounts of money and time which have been committed towards countless expeditions, digital mapping projects, and scientific photo-analysis, the discovery of verifiable Ark remains seems to be as elusive today as it has been in times past.

At the risk of piling on perhaps further disappointment and frustration, it is this author's steadfast belief that even the smallest traces of the Ark have long since disappeared and no trace which could ultimately prove its existence will ever be found on the mountain itself. While this sounds like a brash and foolhardy statement to be making, we would do well to pause for a moment and consider the fact that the Ark's primary mission was to provide a method of transport, in this case, from the Old World to the New. However, once its primary mission had been completed and its occupants vacated the premises, the secondary mission of the Ark conceivably would have been represented by the ready supply of raw resources which the structure itself could provide, chiefly in the form of cut, fashioned, and seasoned timbers...enough to build the first settlements located somewhere in the valley below.

At best, the reforestation taking place after the Flood would have barely reached sapling stage, so this would make the timber used in the construction of the Ark an invaluable resource which was decidedly in short supply. While it is true there must have been vast fields of fallen trees heaped up in great piles, it is just as obvious these trees would be hopelessly entangled in massive log jams which were also choked with decomposing bodies and other refuse the likes of which one can only imagine. If one doubts this, then perhaps we may recall the horribly graphic video footage from the 2004 Indian Ocean disaster where massive tsunamis swept through coastal villages in Indonesia, Sri Lanka, India, and Thailand, killing more than 225,000 people. Especially gruesome were the vignettes detailing the removal of bloated bodies buried in indescribable mountains of refuse and flotsam.<sup>2</sup>



These images, though extremely disconcerting, should also leave us with a blood-chilling idea of just how unpleasant such a comparable post-diluvial salvage operation would have been for Noah and his family. It is also reasonable to expect any ground salvaged timber which might be successfully harvested would also likely be water logged and covered over by layers of muddy sediments, making it extremely difficult to work with. As any lumberjack worth his salt will tell you, there is nothing which dulls a saw blade faster than dirt embedded within wood. The bottom line is Noah needed seasoned timbers and the only readily available source would be, as the Bible has already established, the pitched wood used in the construction of the Ark.

Some may point out the fact that there was indeed another abundant resource in the form of mud, which the survivors could have used to manufacture bricks. While this is true, it is also just as important to point out that mud is not the only ingredient needed to make a strong and durable brick; one also needs a good supply of straw. We must also consider the fact that this technology would have required drying kilns which would have been a necessity in the manufacture of Noah's brick, since he was no longer in an equatorial region where there was sufficient warmth from the sun to bake the bricks naturally. The use of these drying kilns means Noah would have also required a large supply of firewood to stoke the drying fires.

On the other hand, even if bricks were used as a supplemental building material, it would not have precluded the need for timbers to be used in the construction of load-bearing walls, roof supports, cross beams, bracing, and scaffolds. Also, just as important was the need for seasoned timbers in the construction of transport wagons and skids to move the raw materials themselves. Once again, this obvious necessity leads us back to the Ark as the only dependable source which could provide Noah and his family with readily usable wood.

It is highly probable that within a relatively short period of time the Ark was methodically dismantled, and every timber scrap yielded from the ship was incorporated in shelters located within the first lowland settlements established by Noah and his family. Though we are left with no physical evidence to substantiate this theory, there have also to date been

no conclusive discoveries to refute the possibility that the Ark was not systematically scavenged.

Ron Wyatt is a name that frequently surfaces when the topic of Ark expeditions is mentioned. While it is true Mr. Wyatt claims to have discovered the ship and recovered actual pieces of petrified wood from the hull, it is also a fact that, to date, he has been very secretive and unwilling to submit his archeological samples for independent testing. In fact there have been several members of his team who were at one time avid supporters, but have since left Mr. Wyatt's organization because of various disagreements over the validity of his site testing methods and sample verification analysis. Unfortunately, until the controversies surrounding Mr. Wyatt's work have been sufficiently investigated and/or until verifiable tests are conducted on the samples he has collected; his discoveries cannot be seriously considered.

It is this author's observation that human nature is inherently consistent regardless of whether it manifests itself in the familiar mental reasoning processes of today or in the way our ancient ancestors likely reasoned things out in their lifetime. Especially when survival is the motivating factor, the creativity of the human mind is a wondrous and irreplaceable God-given attribute which is as consistently inspirational today as it would have been to witness in our ancient ancestry. The Ark was simply too valuable an asset to just abandon and leave to the ravages of time. Noah and his family would have naturally thought to salvage its resources, and it is just as reasonable to believe his succeeding generations would have continued to pick over this invaluable raw resource until all remaining vestiges of its presence would have completely disappeared.

In an indirect way, this theory does offer one ray of hope...that is, if it manages to pass the litmus test of intense debate which is likely to be initiated after the printing of this book. We can consider the very practical possibility that future expeditions might fare much better if they concentrated their searches on ancient settlement sites located near the *base* of Ararat rather than on its peak. It is conceivably possible these efforts might meet with more success by the discovery of carbon datable wood samples within such ruins which could have once been timbers removed from Noah's Ark. Of course, how one might substantiate the fact that

such a discovery actually came from the Ark would be difficult and challenging, to say the least.

Proposing a contrary and perhaps radical theory such as this will undoubtedly stir up the proverbial hornet's nest and is likely a hard pill to swallow for those with a mind for adventure and exploration. Unfortunately, this theory also raises a valid question as to what Mr. Hagopian, the young shepherd boy who journeyed to the Ark with his grandfather, actually saw. Was it truly the Ark, or was it simply some symbolic structure built several centuries later as a memorial to the famous event?

Perhaps enough has been said, but before moving on it is important to note that this admittedly unsubstantiated theory should not be taken as an insult to the memory of Mr. Hagopian or, for that matter, any other Christian adventurer who has selflessly dedicated precious resources and time in the hopes of discovering the existence of Noah's Ark. In fact, just the opposite is true, since this author deeply respects and actively defends any individual displaying a passion for our Creator while endeavoring to validate His omnipresence through the discovery of irrefutable physical evidence. Admittedly, it is this author's sincere hope that one day the actual remains of the Ark *will* be discovered and he will be obliged to eat his words!

Not to put too fine a point on it, but it should occur to us that Lucifer would be especially motivated to make sure humans would find it nearly impossible to discover any object as important as the Ark simply because it would make his evil soul-gathering work considerably more difficult. On the other hand, it also makes sense that a find as profound and convincing as the discovery of the Ark might actually serve to effectively eliminate the determinative role one's faith must play as a believer in today's world.

Consider the fact that in order for us to truly have faith it means we must believe, even if it means doing so in the absence of *any* irrefutable scientific proof or physical evidence to the contrary. Since a choice as pivotal as this ultimately determines whether or not one is to receive the gift of eternal life, it is conceivable and perhaps even probable that God might also confound any efforts surrounding such a discovery from ever reach-

ing the light of day. Did He not perform this same disappearing act with the Ark of the Covenant, the Tree of Life and the Garden of Eden?

Several generations' worth of synergistic development and technical know-how was lost, except what was retained in the memories of Noah and his family. The challenge was that while they likely retained most of these memories, they were only capable of reproducing information which Noah and his family personally exposed to their children. More importantly, they no longer possessed the intermediate steps, developmental structure, or supporting framework that was previously available as a ready reference to continued technological advancements, which could only lead to a further breakdown of meaningful developmental progression.

There were other mitigating factors that also worked against the retention as well as dissemination of information. The Bible tells us in Genesis 6:3 that God intended to put a reduced time limit of 120 years as the total length of time the average man was going to be allowed to live. Though this age limitation was established just before the Flood and was intended sometime in the near future (Noah was 950 years when he died), age would be a severely limiting factor with regard to a person's ability to acquire and communicate knowledge in the post-diluvial world. In fact, Genesis 11 reveals that there was a rather drastic decrease of approximately 100 years in the average lifespan, starting with the first generation succeeding Noah.

Shortened life spans accelerated the lapsed time between each succeeding generation, and since much of the information disseminated was by oral recitation retained from memory, the chances of those memories becoming distorted and confused would also increase exponentially. As an example, many of us have played the game where an individual is given a message to memorize and pass down to the next person in line. The last person is then required to reiterate the message out loud as best he can by using his own personal memory and recall. The usual result is the message becomes humorously distorted and garbled. This is because the more individuals involved in the communication process, the greater the chance that important details are lost or mistranslated. It is the same with shortened life spans because this translates to fewer experiences

accumulated over a given time period which is further hindered by the exponential increase in the number of different individuals needed to communicate a given body of acquired knowledge.

What is remarkable is the fact that there still appears to have been considerable purpose and intelligence present as succeeding generations of Noah's descendants began to spread throughout the New World. The Table of Nations listed in Genesis 10 breaks out the general dispersal patterns as they had originated from each of Noah's sons. Shem's descendants migrated south of Ararat and eventually founded the Hebrew, Chaldean, Assyrian, Persian, and Syrian civilizations. Ham's successive generations journeyed further south into the Fertile Crescent area where the Canaanite, Egyptian, Philistine, Hittite, and Amorite civilizations emerged. Japheth's descendents migrated west to become the foundation for Greek, Thracian, and Scythian civilizations. What the Table of Nations does not expound upon, but what becomes clearly obvious to anyone taking the time to ponder these verses, is the high level of communication that had to have been established in order to maintain such an accurate and ongoing record of this progressive dispersal!

When early American settlers began migrating across the North American continent, they initially communicated by hand-written letter to those they left behind. These letters were shuttled back to the various centers of civilization via riders and baggage trains which linked settlements and trading posts together along the travel routes blazed by the westward migration. In succeeding generations, cities, settlements, and outposts were further linked together by organized post rider networks such as the Pony Express. Eventually, even these slower forms of communication were replaced by telegraphic wire services which had the ability to communicate over vast distances within minutes.

In each case, the basis of communication was always the written word. Though our society places an extremely vital, if not indispensable importance, on writing, it appears Antediluvians, as well as the initial generations succeeding the Flood, placed very little, if any, importance to this form of communication. So, how did they effectively pass information to one another?

The Greek philosopher, Plato, referenced an ancient legend about the Egyptian god, Theuth, in his presentation of *Phaedrus*. Theuth was supposedly the god who invented the use of letters, and in an effort to popularize the use of this discovery, he introduced the concept to his ruler, Thamus. During the presentation, Theuth maintained this important discovery would aid in the retention of information and thereby increase wisdom. King Thamus pondered this for a few moments and then shocked Theuth by informing him that this new form of communication would, in fact, *decrease* rather than increase wisdom because it would encourage forgetfulness in the minds of those who embraced it. King Thamus continued by claiming that students of writing would develop weaker minds, learning only the appearance instead of the reality of wisdom because they would fall into the habit of simply repeating and writing words rather than understanding their meaning. This, prophesied the king, would ultimately limit rather than expand knowledge and wisdom. King Thamus immediately punctuated his judgment by condemning Theuth for even considering such an idea.<sup>3</sup>

What is remarkable, or perhaps inevitable, is that King Thamus' prophesies eventually became a reality for the Egyptians because it quickly becomes obvious to readers of the translated texts from the Egyptian ceremonial *Book of the Dead*, that the priests and scribes who were copying the funeral texts had no idea what their significance was. It appears as if they simply translated and copied information into their own language without attempting to understand or interpret the underlying concepts that were being communicated by the orators.

There is another fascinating ring of truth to the Theuth legend because substantial evidence regarding the use of writing seems to be completely absent from Antediluvian societies. To date, the earliest forms of writing come from the discovery of the so-called plant-like and trident-shaped markings found on fragments of pottery dating back to 3,600 BC. They were found at the Harappa excavation located in the Indus valley. According to Dr. Richard Meadow of Harvard University, the director of the Harappa digs, these primitive inscriptions found on the pottery shards may pre-date all other known writing. Many consider these to be simple pictographs, and since these are the only examples discovered to date, it is possible the tablets might not represent a form of writing at all.<sup>4</sup>

Until the discovery of the Harappa tablets, it was thought the Egyptians were the first to have invented writing. This claim originated from the primitive words which were uncovered in southern Egypt at the tomb of King Scorpion. The inscription was carbon dated to the period between 3,300 – 3,200 BC.<sup>5</sup> This discovery was later overshadowed by the Kish Tablet, which was excavated from Sumerian ruins and carbon dated around 3,500 BC, thus making it slightly earlier than the King Scorpion example discovered in Egypt.<sup>6</sup>

In spite of King Thamus' prophetic warning, writing obviously managed to become a reality and seems to have been a positive contribution to many societies springing from Ham, Shem, and Japheth's progeny. Ultimately though, it appears to have also acted as a limitation with regard to the retention of memories, since post-diluvial civilizations no longer found it necessary to rely on memory and oral recitation as the primary dissemination of knowledge. Instead, the organization and presentation of the words themselves became the primary focus with regard to the storage of information.

No longer did humans pass technological information orally from father to son, as was the established tradition before the Flood; now the information was written, gathered, and stored in vast centralized depositories which eventually resulted in only a privileged few having the necessary technical capabilities as well as discretionary access to the records themselves. This centralization effort presented a two-fold challenge in that many would now have to rely on a few for the interpretation of knowledge and information. The second and far worse consequence was that the depositories themselves suddenly became susceptible to natural disasters as well as providing a tempting military target for foreign invaders during times of war. As a result, the collective knowledge of a civilization, which they had so painstakingly amassed, could suddenly be threatened, thus compromising the very foundation of their existence!

Many of us are familiar with examples of wanton destruction, such as the attack on Athens led by the self-appointed tyrant, Peisistratus, in 546 BC. Fortunately, Peisistratus was a patron of the arts, so the extensive collection of poems written by Homer and subsequently housed in the Athens library managed to survive this onslaught. On the other hand,

there are other examples in history where the outcome was considerably less fortunate. As an example, the papyri from the library of the Memphis Temple of Ptah were totally destroyed when the Assyrians invaded Egypt between 671 – 667 BC.<sup>7</sup> The same fate befell 200,000 volumes housed in the library of Pergamus in Asia Minor. Another unfortunate example occurred when the Romans captured and leveled the capital city of Carthage during the final battle of the Punic Wars in 146 BC. One of the irretrievable losses during that particular battle was the Carthage library which housed over 500,000 volumes.<sup>8</sup> Perhaps the most commonly known literary disaster in history was the burning of the Alexandrian library during the Egyptian campaign, led by Julius Caesar, in which 700,000 priceless scrolls were irretrievably consumed by the flames.

In spite of this, the Alexandrian library survived the Roman invasion and once again became the central depository of learning for the Mediterranean world. Even the Biblical Magi, who diligently studied prophecies surrounding the birth of Christ, were regular customers to this famous library. In fact, it is highly probable they visited the library while conducting some of the preparatory research which sent them on that prophetic journey to Bethlehem. Unfortunately, even *this* priceless collection of knowledge was destined not to survive the scourges of war, for in 640 AD it was again subjected to foreign invasion when Omar, the second Caliph of Islam, decided to use the millions of books and scrolls housed within the library to heat the city's bathing facilities. For over 6 months, the fires ceaselessly roared as they continued to be fueled by the knowledge of the ancients. As if to add further insult to injury, the Caliph decreed: "The contents of these books are in conformity with the Koran, or they are not. If they are, the Koran is sufficient without them; if they are not, they are pernicious; therefore, let them be destroyed."<sup>9</sup>

Lest we become too confident in our "civilized" complacency, let us not forget that this senseless destruction was not limited to ancient history. We have only to read the countless "official" book-burning sessions sponsored in the name of religion during the Inquisition period to learn the extent of our not-too-distant ancestral prejudices. There were also the numerous book burnings conducted by the Russian Bolshevik purge and the German Nazi regime. These are only a few of many examples which illustrate a much more recent display of nationalistic prejudice toward the written word.



We can only cringe in disbelief and ponder at what priceless information was forever lost to the world at the expense of self-righteous indignation and/or abject stupidity. Could the handed down information contained in the Alexandrian volumes have better informed us as to the extent of technology residing with Antediluvians? Could it have provided us with stories about the invasion of off-world creatures which possessed unique powers and technologies that were used to subjugate mankind? Could it have given us more information about the subsequent gene wars that were launched against man and how hybrids conspired to pit brother against brother in a relentless bloodbath of destruction? Would we better understand things about our solar system, deep star galaxies, and the universe we live within? Would we have had access to books describing how wood could be altered and strengthened enough for building ship hulls capable of withstanding water leaks, even while exposed to tremendous pressures? Would we be privy to the secrets behind strange and technically sophisticated sources of artificially created light along with perpetual power generators? Would we have a better grasp of the laws of gravity and how one might overcome these limitations in order to both shape and move massive stones and build magnificent structures that were capable of withstanding nature's elements and the ravages of time?

Of course, we will never know the full extent of what was lost, but we can sometimes capture a glimpse by what remains...in the form of tantalizing bits and pieces, that is. In some cases, even if the original template long ago disappeared, we can still be both amazed and perplexed when we discover copied documents which were obviously inspired by original works which have long since vanished. For example, there is ample evidence that post-diluvians rapidly expanded into all areas of the globe, yet they managed to maintain open lines of communication to such an extent that critical documents such as the Table of Nations, which accurately tracked expansion and colonization, could be maintained. This capability presupposes a working knowledge of geology and geography; it also means an extensive survey of the New World must have been conducted for the purposes of keeping communication lines open.

There appears to have been a world survey, but of course many of these original documents were probably lost when the libraries were destroyed. A classic example of this can be found in a number of remarkable carto-

graphical maps which surfaced during the medieval and Renaissance periods. These maps obviously appear to be copies made from much earlier maps that were themselves probably copies from even older originals lost in antiquity. As one studies the maps closely, they will begin to notice the copied maps oftentimes display a level of knowledge and competency which was far beyond the capabilities of the cartographers who actually produced the maps.

Perhaps the most famous example, which has received much attention, is the Piri Reis chart of 1513.<sup>10</sup> Piri Reis (actually, his real name was Ahmet Muhiddin) not only distinguished himself as a naval captain in the Ottoman fleet of Suleiman the Magnificent, but was also an itinerant map maker and passionate collector. Pire Reis noted in both the *Kitabi Bahriye* atlas as well as the 1513 chart that he drew his maps from twenty older maps which he had obtained over time. Eight of these maps, he believed, were handed down from Alexander the Great. Other maps were captured from a Spanish sailor in 1501, who told Piri Reis that he had been on voyages with Christopher Columbus. In exchange for his freedom, the sailor gave Piri Reis some of the charts which Columbus had used in locating the islands of the Western Hemisphere. It is not known where Columbus actually obtained these secret maps, but the obvious conclusion is that Columbus basically “rediscovered” lands which someone else had charted centuries before!

After Piri Reis’s death in 1554, the Bahriye Atlas remained as a milestone achievement, but his 1513 chart was lost until 1929, when Malil Edhem, the director of the Turkish national Museum, was cleaning a dusty store-room in the Topkapi Palace, located in Istanbul, and discovered fragments of the old map. Though there was scant publicity, copies were studiously sent to various museums around the world. In 1956, a visiting Turkish naval officer forwarded a copy of the map to the US Navy Hydrographic Office in Washington, DC, where Captain Arlington Mallory subjected it to a more thorough analysis.

What initially jumped out at Mallory was that the map showed South America and Africa in correct relative longitude. This was surprising, since sixteenth century maps could only display longitude measurements by guesswork. It would be another two hundred years before the correct

longitudinal relationship between the two continents was established! The next item that startled Mallory even more was that the map accurately revealed the coastline of Queen Maud Land in Antarctica. This was extremely odd, since the southern continent's existence was only a rumor until 1819! What is even more amazing is that Mallory discovered that the islands and bays depicted on the 1513 chart are the same as they appear below the Antarctic ice sheet, which was only recently detailed by modern-day seismic echo readings and electronic telemetry.

In 1957, Reverend Daniel Lineham, director of the Western Observatory of Boston College, who had previously participated in an expedition to Antarctica, obtained a copy of the chart. After careful examination, Lineham agreed with Mallory's observations; the Piri Reis map detailed regions only recently discovered. Of particular note was an Antarctic mountain range which wasn't identified until 1952. The researchers all agreed, Piri Reis had to have possessed charts drawn by someone who had mapped Antarctica *before* the southern continent had disappeared below the ice cap! These observations legitimized the fact that the Piri Reis map was the product of ancient origin because no one in 1929, or for that matter 1513, could have reproduced the geographical information contained in this chart.

Eventually, Professor Charles Hapgood received a copy and partnered with mathematician Richard Strachan at Keene State College. Professor Hapgood methodically analyzed the 1513 map along with other charts from the Renaissance period. Professor Hapgood's examination resulted in a number of observations, each one deepening the mystery of the map's origin. First, the center of the Piri Reis map is located at the intersection of the meridian of Alexandria, 30 degrees East longitude, and the Tropic of Cancer. All Greek cartographers based the center of their maps on the meridian of Alexandria; thus, it confirms Reis's statement that the source maps he used for his drawings came from the Alexandrine period. Another indication of Greek influence was that the map projection was based on an incorrect estimate of 4.5 percent for the total circumference of the Earth. There was only one cartographer in the ancient world that had made that overestimation; it was Eratosthenes.

The Hapgood team redrew the Piri Reis map grid to correct the Eratosthenes error and was amazed to discover all existing longitude errors

on the map instantly disappeared. As Hapgood noted, "This could only mean the Greek cartographers, when they prepared their maps using the circumference of Eratosthenes, had before them source maps which had been drawn without the Eratosthenes error...in fact, without any error at all!" The conclusion is obvious; the geographical knowledge which Piri Reis incorporated into his 1513 map did not come from the Greeks but from an unknown source which possessed an advanced science of map making that surpassed even the Greeks!

As stated before, the map revealed a remarkable accuracy of both longitude and latitude measurements. During Piri Reis's lifetime, instruments enabling a ship navigator to find correct longitude were nonexistent. It was not until the invention of the chronometer in 1765, by John Harrison, that it was possible to obtain accurate longitude readings. It should also be noted that the determination of latitude involves exacting astronomical observation. To the trained eye, one can tell the differences recorded by professional captains as opposed to adventuresome explorers. When Columbus made his first voyage to the New World, he did not record any longitudinal measurements and only attempted three for latitude, which, to be expected, were all incorrect.

For almost one hundred years after that famous voyage, European map-makers, using the guesswork of explorers such as Columbus, placed the islands of Cuba and Hispaniola above, rather than below, the Tropic of Cancer. In contrast, Piri Reis' chart shows the Caribbean, Spanish, African and South American coasts in the correct positions relative to each other. Even such isolated land areas as the Cape Verde Islands, the Azores, and the Canary Islands are accurately situated by latitude and longitude. The Piri Reis chart depicts the Caribbean region at right angles to its normal position, and South America appears elongated.

Hapgood deduced that the original source maps from which Piri Reis copied must have been drawn using a circular grid based on spherical trigonometry and with the focal point situated in Egypt. Testing this hypothesis, the Hydrographic Office of the US Navy drew a modern map using the same grid, and in such a construction the Caribbean indeed appeared at right angles and South America was elongated. The circular projection style was not fully developed in Europe until hundreds of

years after the 1513 chart had been drawn. Piri Reis revealed his unfamiliarity with such a projection by treating the land area of the original as flat Mercator-type relief; he shifted and spliced the original grid to compensate for the curvature.

The Piri Reis map also shows islands and several other locations along the Central and South American coast which were only briefly explored but not accurately positioned prior to 1513. These locations include the Isle of Pines, Andros Island, San Salvador, and Jamaica. Farther down the coast of South America, the chart surprisingly shows the mouths of the Amazon and the island of Marajo correctly drawn and perfectly located in longitude and latitude.

The most intriguing feature of the Piri Reis map is the coastline of Antarctica, which reveals the region of Queen Maud Land. Modern seismic maps have identified that this coast is covered with crags and numerous mountain chains with jagged peaks breaking through the current levels of ice. The Piri Reis map shows the same type of coast, but without the ice. Mallory discovered two bays on the Piri Reis map where the seismic map showed land. When modern-day experts were asked to check their measurements, they discovered the sixteenth-century map was correct and theirs was wrong! Professor Hapgood concurs that the map is indicative of someone possessing measuring techniques which were not employed in Europe until the nineteenth century. Furthermore, the continent of Antarctica was surveyed and mapped before the continent was covered with ice.

The Piri Reis map is not the only map documenting an ancient knowledge of dynamic global conditions which existed and then changed or disappeared in the distant past. The Oronteus Finaeus map of 1531 shows rivers in Antarctica where today mile-thick glaciers flow.<sup>11</sup> The Hadji Ahmed map of 1559 depicts the Ice Age land bridge that existed between Siberia and Alaska.<sup>12</sup> The Andrea Benincasa map of 1508 indicates that northern Europe was covered by the farthest advance of the Ice Age glaciations.

Based on the cumulative evidence, we can only conclude that the medieval maps originated from source maps constructed by an advanced civilization dating further back than any of the known ancient cultures.

Centuries before the Egyptian, Babylonian, Greek or Roman civilizations existed, at a time when the Antarctic and Arctic glacial ice was just beginning. This post-Flood civilization possessed knowledge of surveying and cartography comparable to what we have today.

In addition to their science, these surveyors also had at their disposal an advanced form of technology, along with instruments and trained specialists to use them, for the purposes of measuring longitude and latitude. Furthermore, this civilization must have been organized and directed on a global scale. In order to place these findings within the historical framework, we must conclude that this survey had to have been made shortly after the Flood, when the land masses were left in their present forms, but before the ice began to accumulate at the poles.

In Genesis 10:25 we are introduced to a descendant of Shem called Peleg; he was given this name because “in his day was the Earth divided.” The usual interpretation of this passage is that it refers to the delineation of nations; however, it could also mean division as in “allotment, marking off an area, or a measurement.” Thus, the passage could read, “Peleg, in his day was the Earth measured, or surveyed.” Mizraim, a grandson of Noah, is also one who may have shared in the responsibility of charting the world. His name means “to delineate, to draw up a plan, to make a representation, especially in association with measuring distances.” The Bible indicates Mizraim was one of the founders of ancient Egypt and it is significant to note that at least two of the Renaissance maps showing a circular projection with the focal point positioned in Egypt were the 1513 Piri Reis chart and the Reinal chart, which dated back to 1510.

The survey time period must have taken approximately 300 years to complete, for among the maps of Antarctica, for example, we find charts where the continent is completely free of ice. The Oronteus Finaeus map of 1531 indicated that the center of the continent was starting to fill with ice when its source maps were drawn. On the other hand, the Piri Reis chart of 1513 and the Mercator chart of 1569 picture only the Antarctic coastline free of glaciers. Therefore, we must conclude that Antarctica was surveyed not once but several times, before and during the period the southern polar icecap was spreading out over the continent.

In the Zeno brothers' map of 1339, Greenland is shown free of glaciers as it was prior to the Ice Age. In comparison, Ptolemy's map of the North depicts a glacial sheet advancing across the southern and central parts of Greenland. This map also shows glaciers retreating from northern Germany and southern Sweden. This could only have come from the findings of surveying parties exploring the areas before, during, and after the Ice Age. There is sufficient evidence pointing toward a unified focus on the part of geographers, surveyors and scientific explorers during the gray dawn of post-Flood development and indicating that the maps developed from this effort heavily influenced map makers in the Middle Ages.

What is truly remarkable is the formidable task which confronted Noah and his family to survey, map, subjugate, and colonize the new world without killing themselves in the process! If we reflect for a moment and consider incidences from our not-too-distant past where man was pitted against the elements and came up the loser, perhaps then we can begin to appreciate some of the impossible challenges these pioneering families faced. For example, one only has to read the initial colonization efforts led by the early explorers in North America to learn that life can be tenuous at best when confronted by the harsh realities of survival in a virgin landscape. In fact, had it not been for the unselfish assistance of indigenous peoples situated near the initial Pilgrim settlements; it is highly unlikely any of these God-fearing but misplaced individuals would have survived. Had this been the case, it is probable that further colonization attempts would have been abandoned, since the cost in manpower and resources would have been considered prohibitive.

When the French Emperor, Napoleon Bonaparte, initiated the 1812 campaign in his abortive attempt to subjugate Russia, he crossed the Niemen River with an invading army of over a million men, counting reserves, support columns, and baggage trains. Less than four months later, and after a nightmarish retreat from Moscow through central Russia, he once again crossed the Niemen...only this time with less than 40,000 frost-bitten and half starved men! Approximately 380,000 died in battle; another 160,000 depleted the rosters because of desertion or capture; the remaining 420,000 men perished as a direct result of disease and exposure to the elements.<sup>14</sup>

Another example closer to the present day occurred during World War II when a Japanese force of 8,500 battle-hardened troops led by Major General Tomitaro Horii landed in New Guinea with orders to launch an overland invasion across the treacherous Owen Stanley Range and capture Port Moresby, a strategic naval base held by the Americans. The Japanese troops made landfall unopposed and immediately melted into the New Guinea jungle where they began one of the most nightmarish ordeals recorded in the annals of the Pacific war. The Japanese soldiers were relentlessly attacked by blood-thirsty insects, vicious reptiles, hungry animals, heat, humidity, thirst, and extreme dehydration as they inched there way over disappearing trails and hidden precipices which claimed more lives with every foot of advance.

One soldier recorded in a recovered diary how the razor-sharp blades of shoulder-high grass would slice through their uniforms and lay the flesh wide open. If the victim did not receive immediate medical attention from such wounds, they would quickly fester, causing the soldier to fall over dead from loss of blood or a systemic infection. The entire force, including General Horii, eventually died to the man as a combined result of the march and the brief battle which ensued following their contact with the allies. This became an embarrassment to the Japanese military establishment who immediately took steps to suppress the incident. Ironically, the Americans had foreseen this potential threat and positioned a small Australian force to cover any attack from that direction. This foresight paid off when the remains of General Horii's force finally managed to make an appearance. The Australian unit covered themselves in glory by successfully repulsing the attack; however, the Allies never suspected the full extent of the invasion attempt and only learned the details of this abortive expedition after the war had ended.<sup>15</sup>

The fact that post-diluvial humans were able to survey and colonize the planet within such a short time is remarkable and stands as a shining testament to their strength and stamina. It indicates that they were still masters of considerable intelligence and incredible technologies which could be deployed against the harsh elements they undoubtedly faced during this regeneration period. It is also a living testament to the absolute perfection that God lavished on His special creation. Even in its sinful state, it seems early man still had powerful attributes that sometimes



even surprised the very Creator Himself yet allowed him to master his environment and overcome difficulties which likely might crush the spirit of his modern-day counterpart.

The Bible indirectly endorses these rugged survivability tendencies because we find that twice it was necessary for God to intervene for the specific purpose of slowing down the forward momentum displayed by His unique creation. The first time was when the Lord placed a limitation on the average age of humans; the next example was when God visited the construction site at Babel and was taken aback by the progress of a complex building program concentrated on a great city featuring an immense tower as its focal point. Unfortunately, we are not privy to exactly what technologies were involved here because the Bible does not give any details regarding the stated goals which might have been driving the overall construction program in this city.

On the other hand, and especially when given God's rather unique yet immediate response to what He saw during His visit, we can pretty much get the idea that humans, despite a devastating flood catastrophe, were picking up the evolutionary time slack at a prodigious rate! The stated strategic goal by the tower builders of bringing populations together rather than allowing them to scatter throughout the planet poses an interesting question...why was this so important? It is interesting that God did not just destroy the building effort but chose instead to confuse the languages for the singular purpose of countering their intended goal to centralize. Perhaps this is a strong indicator that oral recitation *was* in fact becoming the primary method of communication; otherwise the sudden language barrier imposed by the Creator would not have had such a dramatic and immediate impact. In fact it is possible this sudden dispersal incident could have directly resulted in placing added importance to the application of the written word over the use of the spoken word as a primary source of communication between societies that had suddenly been exposed to unforeseeable language barriers.

There are other questions that continue to linger in the mind, such as what exactly was being built which thus motivated God to intervene with such finality? Throughout human history, we can identify countless examples of man's engineering prowess, especially when building large edifices, so

what was so special about the Babel skyscraper? Was this just another tall building or did it have a special purpose? Could it have functioned as a special conduit which was capable of harnessing some unknown natural force that we are still not privy to today? Or could it have been a welcoming airport beacon which served to summon the alien sons of God to once again return to Earth and bequeath their special powers through new generations of hybrid progeny? Was mankind once again displaying this insane proclivity to elevate Lucifer and replace God?

The Bible does not tell us exactly when the sons of God once again invaded Earth to re-establish their presence, impregnate women, produce *nephilim* hybrids, and organize the process of stealing souls from the Lord. We have already discussed the fact that Lucifer had a much more challenging campaign ahead of him because the Garden of Eden and the Tree of Life had been removed by the Flood, so he no longer had a strategic focal point to his battle plan. There was, however, one other additional challenge that Lucifer was forced to deal with and which promised to make life much more difficult for him and his minions.

The fact is Lucifer was no longer dealing with naïve humans. Antediluvian innocence had been wiped away with the Floodwaters, and Lucifer was now dealing with Noah, a devout man of God, who had personally seen the woeful carnage resulting from man's demand to decide for himself what was good and what was evil. Furthermore, Noah and his family had firsthand experience with Lucifer's methodologies and tactics and thus were capable of better preparing their progeny with knowledge and practical experience critical to the personal defense against the anticipated return of the evil invasion force. You can bet Noah was diligent about preparing his family and encouraging them to make the right choices while personally walking with the Lord...especially in the face of adversity. Noah would depend on them to pass down this important information to their descendants, and it was this unified front that would undoubtedly make life much more difficult for Lucifer.

Ultimately, we learn from the Bible that in spite of this seemingly impregnable front, Lucifer was again successful in driving a wedge between man and his Creator. In Genesis 9:20-25, we read that one of Lucifer's initial attacks managed to create friction between Ham and his father to

the extent that Noah felt it necessary to distance himself from his son. One might conclude that Ham's offense seemed to be a small breach of etiquette with respect to his father's drunken stupor and subsequent nakedness. However, judging by Noah's necessity to place a dreadful curse on Ham and his descendants, we can only surmise that Ham was in the early stages of rebellion and that this was placing a steadily escalating level of tension and frustration which challenged the unity of the family.

There are some Biblical scholars who suggest Ham may have gone so far as to initiate a sexual act with his father, though this author has been unable to locate any substantive source for this information. In any case, Noah acted decisively, and it is no mistake that each of the civilizations descending from Ham seemed to have been infected with hybrid creatures which continually led them toward a source of evil. The festering enmity between Ham, his father, and his brothers seemed to ultimately express itself through his subsequent progeny. It is painfully obvious that through Ham Lucifer was once again able to establish a critical beachhead for his new invasion of Earth.

- <sup>1</sup> Tilling, Robert I., Topinka, Lyn and Swanson, Donald A. *Mount St. Helens Eruption: Eruptions of Mount St. Helens: Past, Present, and Future. The Climactic Eruption of May 18, 1980*. U.S. Geological Survey. Retrieved December 5, 2010. (adapted public domain text) (1990).
  - <sup>2</sup> 2004 Indian Ocean Tsunami: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2004\\_Indian\\_Ocean\\_earthquake\\_and\\_tsunami](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2004_Indian_Ocean_earthquake_and_tsunami)
  - <sup>3</sup> Phaedrus Recital: Discussion of rhetoric and writing (257c–279c)
  - <sup>4</sup> Parpola, Asko. *Indus Scripts: Deciphering the Indus Script*: Cambridge, New York: Cambridge University Press, 1994.
  - <sup>5</sup> King Scorpion 1 scripts: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scorpion\\_I](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scorpion_I)
  - <sup>6</sup> Woods, Christopher. *Kish Tablet: The Earliest Mesopotamian Writing, Visible Language. Inventions of Writing in the Ancient Middle East and Beyond*: Oriental Institute Museum Publications 32, Chicago: University of Chicago, pp. 33–50. 2010.
  - <sup>7</sup> Grimal, Nicolas *Destruction of Memphis: A History of Ancient Egypt* (in German). Blackwell Books. 1992.
  - <sup>8</sup> Ridley, R.T. *Destruction of Carthage, third Punic War*: . “To Be Taken with a Pinch of Salt: The Destruction of Carthage”. *Classical Philology*. 1986.
  - <sup>9</sup> MacLeod, Roy. *Destruction of Library of Alexandria: The Library of Alexandria: Centre of Learning in the Ancient World* (2 ed.). I.B.Tauris. (2004).
  - <sup>10</sup> Hapgood, Charles. *Piri Reis Map: Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings: Adventures Unlimited Pr; New Ed edition*. January 1997.
  - <sup>11</sup> Oronteus Finaeus Map: <http://www.ancientx.com/nm/anmviewer.asp?a=40&>.
  - <sup>12</sup> Hadji Ahmed map: Charles Hapgood, “Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings, Adventures Unlimited Pr; New Ed edition (January 1997).
  - <sup>13</sup> Andrea Benincasa map: <http://www.maphistory.info/benincasa.html>
  - <sup>14</sup> Chandler, David. *War of 1812: Campaigns of Napoleon*: Scribner, 1973.
  - <sup>15</sup> Depuy, Trevor N. *General Horii Invasion of Port Morsby*: Encyclopedia of Military Biography. London: I B Tauris & Co Ltd. 1992 .
- Gamble, Bruce. *Darkest Hour: The True Story of Lark Force at Rabaul – Australia’s Worst Military Disaster of World War II*. St. 2001

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN

❖  
**LET THE GAMES BEGIN**  
❖

Actually, this book has been in the preliminary stages of development for the greater part of this author's life. In the beginning, it was intended to provide nothing more than a systematic documentation of some personal life-altering observations and revelations which might later serve as a set of crib notes that could be used to recall foundational explanations related to some of life's mysteries. Gradually, it was understood that the Lord intended from the beginning to use this effort as a method of achieving a breakthrough in the development of a very close and personal friendship between us. As a plus, it was later revealed that this effort could also be used as an effective tool which might be employed by others to counter the preponderance of clichés many of us habitually experience with regard to evangelizing the Good News to non-believers. When presented in this light, *The Expendable Pawn* represents much more than a collection of interesting facts and perhaps even a few controversial theories patched together for the reader's amusement.

If this effort is truly to succeed, it should be viewed as a primer which is intended to stimulate one's thinking and offer thought provoking posits about who we are and what our purpose is. At the same time, it also details the logic or lack of logic which persists between Believers and non-believers as to the true origin of species *Homo sapiens* and God's purpose for mankind. Metaphorically speaking, this book can be used most effectively if one understands it is not a rocket ship loaded with all the answers but rather a launching pad designed to advance new and better ideas as they are revealed to other Believers who are also engaged in their own personal relationships with King Jesus!

Of course the book's primary mission must also serve as a wake-up call to Believers so they can encourage non-believers to join the ranks in Christ with greater success. Part of that success is dependent upon personal preparedness and the ability to engage and discuss Biblically

related topics with a modicum of intelligence and understanding when given the opportunity.

To put it simply, our job is to stimulate and instruct but perhaps not in the traditional sense...as in a pulpit call. Our individual job description, with respect to successfully delivering the message of Grace, is not static and measured but rather dynamic and ever changing with respect to attracting a non-believer's attention. As an example, most of us are quite familiar with the typical "love game" rules where the male is initially expected to attract the attention of the female with clever one-liners and other actions designed to communicate, in a complementary fashion, the fact that she has *already* succeeded in capturing his attention. Once attention is gained by either of the parties in question, the real work begins because it now involves the ability to successfully sell oneself to the other, and that requires focus and sincerity.

The "Grace game" if you will, should be played out in a similar fashion, thereby setting up a desire in the receiver's heart for additional feedback information. Of course, when an opportunity presents itself, it is important that one projects a level of competence and understanding. Once a non-believer's inquisitive nature has been stimulated and their attention is gained, the ability to recognize the best delivery method becomes critical and requires constant inner vigilance and sensitivity to the visual and verbal clues provided by the subject. Prayer also helps!

There are many non-believers who simply "live for the moment" and display an attitude of apathy because they allow themselves to become overwhelmed by daily pressures and feel they have no options left which might bring hope back into their lives. In this case, the best way to gain the attention of such an individual is to lead a exemplary lifestyle so they will come, on their own volition, to question what it is you have that they do not! These individuals do not necessarily care about the mysteries surrounding human existence; instead, they seek something to fill a desperate void in their lives and they simply do not know where to look. The fact is our Lord is already knocking on the door of their hearts but they just do not realize it!

There are other non-believers who have begun to recognize the existence of a Creator, but have been misled and confused by incomplete theories

and obstinate beliefs forwarded by misguided “intellectuals” who are not willing to consider all the facts. They instead react to new ideas by building walls of resistance and punitive legalities in an effort to protect them from exposure. Unfortunately, we as Christians have all too often witnessed so called “believers” who react in this fashion, thereby doing more harm than good when confronted by an inquisitive non-believer. Many of these individuals verbalize a superficial yet fanatical defiance with spontaneous one-way statements which only succeed in displaying a level of ignorance that is in direct proportion to their personal level of insecurity.

At one time or another, we have all witnessed the shallow cliché type statements or responses that leave no room for further discussion. As an example, “God is all powerful, so if the Bible says His creative artistry took seven literal days, well then that is the way it happened.” This is an impetuous close-ended response, and those who make such statements must understand it means absolutely nothing to someone who is physically staring at a 30,000-year-old human skeleton.

It is paramount we understand that non-believers have the right to question a Creationist’s positional beliefs, especially when we make a claim that the planet is only 6,000 year old! If we respond with off-the-hip pat answers which lack sufficient substance, we will simply insult the inquisitor’s intelligence and may even contribute to further disillusionment and doubt by all parties in question. An intelligent thoughtful response to a provocative question shows evidence of considerable forethought and background research which does far more to win a soul over to God than worn out clichés spouted by those who have not adequately thought out their ideological beliefs and are, therefore, unsure of themselves.

Christ’s most profound answers to seemingly impossible questions were delivered on the spot and with very little hesitation, which underscored His advanced preparedness, especially when dealing with challengers to His mission and divinity. The information within these pages is not necessarily to provide the reader with all the answers, but rather to stimulate a thoughtful and logical process of discovery that will eventually result in an unshakable resolve as to why one believes as they do. The reader may not necessarily agree with some of this author’s theoretical conclusions; therefore, the open challenge is to prayerfully develop theories of your



own. In the end, of course, they can only be theories because there is still much we do not know nor will it be fully revealed to us until we have the benefit of standing face-to-face with our Creator, as the Antediluvians once did. At the same time, it should comfort the reader to remember that non-believers are also limited by the same scarcity of information from which they might draw their theoretical conclusions.

In the case of an inquisitive non-believer who might pick up this book, it should be understood that while it does represent an honest endeavor to provide practical ideas and logical information, it is not necessarily intended as a direct reading assignment for such an individual. Much of *The Expendable Pawn's* content relies heavily on a basic rudimentary knowledge of the Bible and its history, along with a clear understanding of its fundamental purposes.

The challenge is that when we are confronted by non-believers about the logic of believing in a loving Creator, it is imperative for each of us to be sufficiently prepared and confident with a logical and well thought out presentation which succeeds by instilling a sense of hope and possibility. If we as responsible Christians are successful in doing this, then, in God's eyes, our mission is sufficiently complete. After all, it is important to remember that our job is simply to *introduce* the message of Grace; what happens after this has been accomplished is up to the Lord. Basically, you might say it is our job to hook 'em but it is the Lord's responsibility to clean 'em up!

We may consider ourselves Christians, but it is still necessary for us to survive in a world that is inhabited by "intellectuals" who may be skeptical and sometimes confrontational with respect to the logic of one's faith that a Holy Trinity truly exists and that we were created as a direct manifestation of a desire for true companionship and unconditional love. The apostle Paul mandated that we not shrink from...indeed that we should vigorously pursue, *any* opportunity to engage in good spirited discussions with meaningful though perhaps misguided individuals, because we never know when such discussions will be used by the Lord as a vehicle to a non-believer's soul. At the very least, it also serves to strengthen and reinforce our own personal beliefs because it spurs the necessity for research and thoughtful meditation.

## LET THE GAMES BEGIN

*The Expendable Pawn* presents a sampling from among the many historical clues which perhaps enlighten us to the fact that Antediluvians enjoyed the benefits of a technically advanced civilization, the types of benefits which we are only beginning to realize today. Modern man is blessed with the Bible, which guides us today in matters of salvation. Of course, this important advantage was not available to Antediluvians in their day because it was not written yet.

We have one other key advantage which was not available to Antediluvians and that is the turbulent history resulting from man's choice to become independent of the Creator, to decide for ourselves what is good and evil. Out of love, God graciously gave us what we so adamantly requested and, unfortunately, we are now forced to witness the horrendous results of our audacious demand. Our world's history is blessed, or cursed, as the case may be, with the indelible bloodstained record of political, military, religious, and economic institutions which came into existence for the singular purpose of grinding down the free spirit of humans through the relentless application of laws, taxes, wars, torture, starvation, and death, all the while claiming that the common good of the institution invariably justified the sacrifice of the very constituents it proposed to serve.

For Antediluvians, it was different but in many ways similar, since they were confronted with a ruthless invasion of off-world creatures which possessed superior powers and heartlessly exploited that advantage to promote their own selfish agendas. You could say the aliens *attacked* Antediluvians with the choice of evil, though it obviously did not appear malevolent to them at the time. This attack must have been hopelessly bewildering to a race of humans who did not possess the previous experiences which their history was unable to provide...that is, the experiential history that could have prepared them for such an unimaginable onslaught.

They were technologically advanced but naïve, they were intelligent but innocent, and they were simply the metaphorical equivalent of deer staring into the headlights of an oncoming Mac truck! Sadly, their independence was so manifested that they chose to embrace the empty promise of eternal life which was falsely promised to them through the application of force rather than by simply returning to the precepts of

love and relationship with a Creator who physically circulated within their very midst!

Perhaps, by their ordeal and our better understanding of their world, it helps us appreciate the tremendous advantages we have today when it comes to matters of determining what is good and what is evil. As an example, it should be much more difficult today for a character such as Adolf Hitler to rise up within the political ranks and propose the extermination of what they arbitrarily consider ethnically “inferior” humans in order to advance the concept of a “superior” race rising out of its ashes. The quantum objections each of us can recite are obvious, but they all germinate from a permanent archive of records, documents, and multimedia vignettes which present horrible and excruciating details resulting from this kind of policy.

The purpose of the numerous Holocaust memorials is not to dwell on the details of unspeakable human suffering but to constantly remind each and every one of us that this is ultimately what happens when a person or, in this case, a society, chooses to embrace evil instead of good. More importantly, it helps us to discount the Neville Chamberlains in life who invariably rise up in the naive expectation that evil can somehow be appeased at the conference table. It is very simple; we asked God for the independence to make our own choices and He gave it to us out of His love and respect for that request. Now, after giving us this independence, we have the unmitigated audacity to blame God for the results of a bad choice...hey, suffering the consequences comes with the territory, my friends, which means it is our responsibility...not His!

When Mel Gibson produced his milestone production of “The Passion of the Christ,” he did not purposely include the graphic cruelty of the Roman guards scourging Christ just to dwell on the unspeakable suffering and gore. Rather, it was to clearly and graphically communicate the ultimate results of the *choice* we (beginning with Adam) made to decide for ourselves what was good and what was evil. The point is, Christ was not deceived by Jews, He was not condemned by Sadducees or Pharisees, and He was not scourged and hung on a cross by Romans. Each and every one of us, as a member of the human community, did this to Christ when we demanded independence and the right to judge for ourselves between good and evil!

## LET THE GAMES BEGIN

This fact was poignantly brought into sharp focus when Mr. Gibson himself demanded to include his own hands holding the hammer and nails in the movie scene where they were driven into Christ's wrists. This was his way of admitting the utter futility of blaming others for our sins or, for that matter, trying to judge between what we think is right and wrong in the actions of others. It was simply Mr. Gibson's way of asking for personal forgiveness as a member of species *Homo sapiens*.

What is truly astounding is that despite the impossible position we have managed to place ourselves in, God continues to love each of us so much that He graciously offered His only Son as a willing sacrifice to redeem the terminal consequences of our very bad decision. Now the only question which remains is who, in the face of such boundless devotion, could possibly refuse such a beautiful gesture?

It is this author's final desire that the plight of the Antediluvians also be closely examined with respect to one other scripturally-based promise, referenced in Luke 17:26. "*And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of Man.*" This verse specifically documents the fact that in the last days, before the return of King Jesus, men will once again live out their daily lives, as was the case in Noah's generation, without considering the horrors awaiting them by choosing to reject their Creator. This is a solemn warning, but this author also believes the verse contains a much more sinister and dark promise which, though not obvious, is attempting to alert us of an approaching time period that envisions a truly frightening and ruthless reality...a synthetically enhanced, life-altering world which is rushing humanity towards its doom, even as we speak.

Noah's generation was confronted by the invasion of an off-world species who subsequently cross-bred with humans in order to sire hybrid offspring, manifesting super-human capabilities. Unfortunately, as we have discovered in these pages, the Antediluvians did not fare to well in dealing with this challenge. In fact their numbers had dwindled down to just eight remaining humans who stood defiantly between what was originally created by God, and Lucifer's sinister objective of total extinction! Modern man has never been subjected to this kind of world; a world inhabited with supernatural beings capable of using unexplainable powers to achieve their objectives...that is...not until now.

In a December, 2010 report, auspiciously titled “The \$100 Genome: Implications for the Department of Defense (DoD)”<sup>1</sup>; a prestigious think-tank organization known as the JASONs advised the United States Government to place its highest priority on enhanced-human research for the development of genotype and phenotype improvements promising to artificially redesign human minds, memories, physiology, offspring, physical appearance, and possibly even the soul itself. This report was submitted in response to a 2009 request to submit a detailed analysis of the Human Enhancement Revolution (HER). The obvious conclusion motivating the JASONs recommendation to fast-track HER research was the realization that, whether we like it or not, HER has become an international winner-take-all race, engaged by numerous national governments and literally thousands of private enterprises, all fueled with trillions of research dollars. So why is this so important, you ask? It is because the winner of this race will possess the ability to wield ultimate power and control over the future of social politics and global economics!

HER research promotes exciting new developments emerging in the combined fields of Genetics, Robotics, Artificial Intelligence, and Nanotechnology (commonly referred to as the GRIN Technologies). Individually, these technologies represent an exponential growth and understanding of how the human machine works, and more importantly, how it can be improved upon. These collective advancements and improvements are being funneled into a goal oriented objective called transhumanism. In short, synthetically manipulated and enhanced beings.

The Utopian goal of transhumanism is to be the first to successfully produce a new breed of human, a synthetically altered human which possesses genetically manipulated perfection, computer enhanced intelligence, robotically enhanced super strengths, and the bio-enhanced capability of deploying micro engineered adaptations that arm the host with lethal invasive weaponry while, at the same time, effectively protecting the host’s internal and external systems with synthetically manufactured and artificially controlled bio-circuitry and armor.

The challenge is transhumanism must also be viewed as the proverbial two-edged sword because this technology also carries with it the ultimate promise of a dystopian nightmare resulting in a complete social

collapse, followed closely by the grim certainty of total human annihilation. C.S. Lewis, a preeminent theologian and Christian apologist, foresaw the results of a progressive abandonment of what many of us refer to as “moral law” based on Judeo-Christian values, and he addressed this threat succinctly in his Collected Letters Series, *The Abolition of Man*, originally published in 1943:<sup>2</sup>

“In order to understand fully what Man’s power over Nature, and therefore the power of some men over other men, really means, we must picture the race extended in time from the date of its emergence to that of its extinction. Each generation exercises power over its successors – and each, in so far as it modifies the environment bequeathed to it and rebels against tradition, resists and limits the power of its predecessors... In reality, of course, if any one age really attains, by eugenics and scientific education, the power to make its descendants what it pleases, [then] all men who live after it are the [victims] of that power. They are weaker not stronger; for though we may have put wonderful machines into their hands, we have preordained how they are to use them. And if, as is almost certain, the age which had thus attained maximum power over posterity were also the age most emancipated from tradition, it would be engaged in reducing the power of its predecessors almost as drastically as that of its successors...The last men, far from being the heirs of power, will be of all men most subject to the dead hand of the great planners and conditioners and will themselves exercise least power upon the future...The final stage [comes] when Man by eugenics, by pre-natal conditioning, and by an education and propaganda based on perfect applied psychology... shall be henceforth free to make our species whatever we wish it to be. The battle will indeed be won. But who, precisely, will have won it?”

Lewis’ use of the term “great planners and conditioners” can be associated with the present day architects of transhumanism, who evangelize their blueprint for the future of species *Homo sapiens*, as the one which will ultimately decide the future of man. The National Science Foundation and the Human Enhancement Ethics Group, based at California Polytechnic State University, recently released a report entitled “Ethics of Human Enhancement: 25 Questions & Answers.”<sup>3</sup> This government funded report detailed critical facets of the issues that must be considered as we

endeavor to become a post-human society. A partial lists of the topics that need to be addressed are as follows:

- What are the policy implications of human enhancement?
- Is the natural-artificial distinction of human enhancement morally significant?
- Does human enhancement raise issues of fairness, access, and equity?
- Will it matter if there is an “enhanced divide” between “new” people classifications?
- How would such a divide make communication difficult between “normal’s” and “enhanced”?
- How should the enhancement of children be approached?
- What kind of societal disruptions might arise from human enhancement?
- Should there be any limits on enhancement for military purposes?
- Might enhanced humans count as someone’s intellectual property?
- Will we need to rethink the very meaning of “ethics” given the dawn of enhancement?

These are chilling questions to say the least! Imagine the unspeakable horror of a world where God creates man, then man rejects God, and now man creates man! The Bible informs us that we were originally created in the image of our Creator; but now we are confronted by the irrepressible propensity to alter and/or duplicate the process of creating human life itself. The possibilities are exhilarating but the fact is, given our sinful nature, we would be quite unable to control such technology if it were to reach the hands of say an individual, private enterprise, or nation that was clandestinely controlled by Lucifer.

At one time or another we have all speculated on the idea that certain political leaders, religious figures, or the occasional military renegade might possibly embody the threat of becoming the long anticipated Anti-Christ, but these are just mere men, no better or worse than other men. Imagine the social impact resulting from the ultra-secret assembly of a super intelligent transhuman which possesses incredible and sometimes

unexplainable powers. This being would subsequently, and perhaps even unexpectedly take control of its destiny, behind the scenes of course, and facilitate the assembly line production of additional transhuman beings, which are incidentally soulless but imbued with physically, and mentally superior attributes, and who are pre-programmed to dominate and subjugate their mere human counterparts.

And let us further speculate that this synthetically produced super being would evangelize, and subsequently lead the transition to a globally governed system. A system that promises world peace and prosperity to all who willingly allow themselves to be governed and, of course, electronically tracked by the transhuman magistrates who have the power to enforce their will on all those choosing to rebel against the system.

Is this not starting to appear frightfully similar to the world experienced by the Antediluvians? Now ask yourself if you are prepared to live in a world such as this. How would any of us prepare ourselves to stand in defiance of a world dominated by transhuman tyranny? Lucifer made a mistake when he allowed eight humans to slip through his fingers during Noah's generation...don't think he will make the same mistake twice. He has a plan folks, and it has been under development for at least six thousand years. We have discovered what he was capable of doing to the Antediluvians but apparently that was just a prelude to what he is about to unleash on last day generations!

This is not an attempt to utilize far-fetched scare tactics or to impose a profitable movie script for the continuation of a new "Terminator" series. Rather it is based on the informed speculation of one possible scenario that could result from the direction in which this formidable transhuman technology is currently heading. Perhaps the reader may envision other scenarios that would promise to overshadow this author's speculations and make his ideas seem like a family picnic in comparison. The point is, it is coming, and it promises to be frightening and surreal!

The objective of presenting such a negative scenario is not to scare the reader but rather to impress upon him or her that we may one day soon be faced with difficult choices because the Bible has warned us that Lucifer will be able to "*deceive the very elect.*" Our ability to withstand such an onslaught must, in part, be based on our ability to discern just what kind



of a world the Antediluvians experienced so we can be better prepared to face our adversary when he finely presents himself. Make no mistake about it; in the last days Lucifer faces the grim reality of his ultimate demise and it should come as no surprise to us that he will unchain his most evil and diabolical plan in an effort to take down as many humans as he possibly can with him. Our only hope for survival will be to familiarize ourselves with his tactics and, of course, recognize the omnipresence of our Divine Creator, while praying most earnestly for His swift return!

Napoleon Bonaparte once said, “I keep my friends close, but I keep my enemies closer.” Napoleon Bonaparte was considered, by many of his contemporaries, to be an undefeatable military genius, but few of his enemies realized that his “genius” was a result of long hours of meticulous planning and a keen interest in initiating a methodical research into the background of his opponent. Perhaps there is a lesson to be learned here!

The preceding commentary was intended to provide a cursory fly-over of a very complex and future-altering social movement that is currently underway. The race to develop morphological transformations, which will ultimately redefine what it means to be human, is not some secretly funded conspiratorial operation or governmental cover-up. The trans-humanism movement is openly debated by religious institutions and enthusiastically embraced by a number of secular apologists who routinely populate the internet with progress articles, official releases, technology reports, and video vignettes detailing all aspects of this subject.

Of course the preceding nightmarish world envisioned by this author can also be counterbalanced by God’s wonderful promise of what can be referred to as the equivalent of a “modern-day Ark.” The Ark that God has promised to send to our rescue is not built out of pitched wood and tar but is rather specifically tailored for the rescue of modern-day man, and to defeat Lucifer’s diabolical plan to enslave every last soul. As was the case for Noah and his family, God did not intend that all those who steadfastly believed in the Lord, should have to be subjected to hybrid dominance, nor does King Jesus intend modern-day Believers to be subjected to the surreal world of satanic transcendence through artificial genetic manipulation.

Our metaphorical equivalent to Noah’s Ark is called the Rapture. The meaning of the word Rapture stems from the Greek word *ἁρπαζο*, which

simply means to be carried off, caught up, or snatched away. The challenge is that many of us are sometimes confused when we hear pastors and theologians talk about the Rapture because it usually digresses into a discussion about *when* the event will actually take place. Paul specifically addresses this subject in 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 and mentions individuals “being taken up.” However again, there exists a considerable amount of controversy as to whether Paul was referring to a period of time *before* Lucifer unleashed his evil plan (called pre-tribulation) or near the *end* of the evil plan (post-tribulation). Unfortunately both sides of this controversy seem to miss the fact that Paul was simply proclaiming a message of comfort to those who will have died, as opposed to those left alive, but the most important point of his message was that God never fails to provide an escape plan to quickly remove Believers before it involves all-encompassing or life-threatening danger!

What we as Believers can take from this promise is that some of us will be laid to rest before the tribulation and then be awakened for the Rapture, and some of us will be fortunate enough to experience the Rapture without experiencing death. Either way the expectation is that we will be spared the horrors associated with a transhuman nightmare because we will be caught up before it gets ugly. Now that is a truly exciting promise!

In closing, it is important to mention that as a Believer, it is impossible for anyone to *prove* their faith regardless of one’s smugness in believing otherwise. On the other hand, each one of us is endowed with the ability to embrace its concepts through love, understanding, and relationship to the point that it eventually begins to *feel* comfortable deep down inside where the Holy Spirit lives in each of us. This is instinctively possible for all of us because it is the way the human machine was originally created.

The Genesis story makes it painfully clear that the human body was not built to survive in a world of sin; it was perfectly designed to fellowship, recreate, and communicate with its Creator. But as a result of our newly requisitioned ability to choose for ourselves between good and evil, the Creator was obliged to provide us with clues about how to deal with the destructive evil that invariably lurks in the heart of each individual, every minute of every day. Those clues were handed down through Moses, and are called the Ten Commandments. Most people today consider the Ten

Commandments to be a list of “do’s” and “do not’s” but if one looks at them closely they will discover the fact they are much more than that. The Ten Commandments are actually a list of “operating instructions,” specifically tailored for the optimum performance of the human machine in a negative and adverse environment. If we adhere to these simple instructions, in the light of this fresh new perspective, we will be far better mentally prepared, as well as physically equipped, to survive in a world dominated by destructive temptation!

It should give us great comfort to know that it is absolutely impossible for secular skeptics and Darwinian Evolutionists to specifically identify where that very first spark of life originated. In addition, they are quite unable (or unwilling) to embrace the mathematical improbabilities that the delicately ordered spiral helix of proteins in a single DNA strand is the product of random chance and natural selection. It is also extremely difficult for them to rationalize how the concept of love and mercy would survive in the transmuted development of mankind while living in a strictly “strong survive, weak perish” world.

With this in mind, let us now imagine that the air is full of excitement and anticipation; each side is fully armed and the oratorical battle lines have been clearly drawn. So now, if everyone is ready...let the games begin!

## LET THE GAMES BEGIN

- <sup>1</sup> “The \$100 Genome: Implications for the Department of Defense: <http://www.fas.org/irp/agency/dod/jason/hundred.pdf>
- <sup>2</sup> Collected Letters of C.S. Lewis *The Abolition of Man* Series: HarperOne March 3, 2009.
- <sup>3</sup> “Ethics of Human Enhancement: 25 Questions & Answers.” Full Report: [www.humanenhance.com/NSF\\_report.pdf](http://www.humanenhance.com/NSF_report.pdf) >> [http://ethics.calpoly.edu/NSF\\_report.pdf](http://ethics.calpoly.edu/NSF_report.pdf)

## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN



❖  
**THE BEGINNING**  
❖

*Live wisely among those who are not Christians,  
and make the most of every opportunity.*

*Let your conversation be gracious and effective  
so that you will have the right answer for everyone.*

\*\*\* *Colossians 4:5-6* \*\*\*

❖  
**PICTURES  
AND  
ILLUSTRATIONS**  
❖

One of the challenges in the production of this book was the need to provide full color photographs and illustrations to support the text. This proved difficult for a number of reasons. First and foremost, photo documentation of existing as well as new discoveries, especially in the fields of archeology and science, change frequently and are in a constant state of flux. Secondly, due to current limitations associated with the hard copy printing industry, it would be both cost-prohibitive and impractical to consider the inclusion of full color photos within this book.

It was felt that one possible solution to this dilemma might be provided by the Internet since this medium of information is, by design, instantly updated and current. We state this is a possible solution since information is being disseminated in two distinct and separate mediums, one hard copy, and the other digital; therefore it is unknown how readers might respond to such an inconvenience. One advantage is that this helps us keep printing and distribution costs down to a minimum, thus allowing us to pass on these savings directly to the buyer.

In the spirit of maximizing the reader's experience with both text and pictures, we invite you to visit us on-line so that you can see full color photos and illustrations referenced within the pages of this book.

This is a free service and there is no obligation, however you will have the opportunity to purchase additional hard copies as well as a digital copy of *The Expendable Pawn* if you so desire. We would also ask that you take a moment and complete a small feedback survey so that we may learn the practicality of our mixed media decision for future publications.

**[expendablepawn.com](http://expendablepawn.com)**



## THE EXPENDABLE PAWN



The Bible tells us God created man in His own image and determined he should become the perfect companion, capable of expressing perpetual love and devotion while exploring the magnificent wonders of the eternal universe together.

Tragically, within the space of a few verses, we learn our original mother and father were unceremoniously kicked out of their perfect paradise after disobeying their Creator. Shortly thereafter, we are further informed the descendants of God's first couple proceeded to give themselves over to some sort of pervasive evil influence despite the fact their Maker was physically appearing amongst them! How was this possible?

What kind of civilization did the descendants of Adam and Eve build, and what were their daily lives like? How were they so effectively led away from the inherent love and protection imparted to them by their Creator?

Who were the evil masters which managed to capture and dominate the free will of man so successfully? Where did they come from, and what was their strategic battle plan? What was the carrot so masterfully dangled in front of humanity's nose?

Within a relatively short span of time, we are shocked to discover the human race was literally eight individuals away from total extinction as Noah takes center stage and begins the construction of a large vessel, thus initiating the tragic yet mysterious chain of events which precipitated the total destruction of all life by a disastrous Flood.

Few Christians will disagree the last days are upon us; therefore, it is essential for us to evangelize the message of Grace even though we are finding ourselves in an increasingly apathetic and hostile environment. It is imperative we better equip ourselves with the ability to confront the seemingly untenable questions and ideological positions which challenge the basis of our faith. That is the singular purpose of this book.

USA \$14.95 Canada \$19.95

Don Wiest was baptized and raised in the protective family atmosphere of the Seventh-day Adventist church. His faith matured after learning to distinguish religious works from the simple yet impeccable logic of Grace. Today Don resides in Arizona and is an avid armchair historian who also has a passion for new discoveries in archaeology and astronomy.



**MOUSE TRAP**  
PUBLICATIONS, LLC  
expendablepawn.com